

Chas. Bok. with this book
Dublin 1677

JOYFUL

NEVVES OVT OF

the newe founde worlde, wherein is
declared the rare and singuler vertues of diverse
and sundrie Hearbes, Trees, Oyles, Plantes, and Stones, with
their aplications, aswell for Phisiche as Chirurgerye, the said he-

png well applied byngeth suche present remedie for
all deseases, as male seeme altogether increible
notwithstanding by practice founde out
to bee true: Also the portraiture of

the saied Hearbes, very apt-

ly described, Engl-

ish by Thon

Fraunc-

ton

Marchant.

1677

Syn
7.7

JOYFUL

NEVV

Imprinted at London in

Pender Church-yarde, by

William Norton.

Imprinted

OUT

Anno Domini.

1677:

Anno Domini

IVY OI
BON VO 3 H V E

the new
ablow, w
the old



Sc.
1720:91

18521

To the right worshipfull Maister

Edwarde Dier Esquire, Ihon Framp-

ton wisheth muche healtche, wch prospc-

taus and perfitue felicitie.



Exournyng right w^ror-
shipfull s^r home into En-
glande out of Spaine, and
now not pressed w^r with
the former toiles of my old
trade. I to paffe the tyme
to some benefite of my cou-
trie, and to auoyde idlenesse: tooke in hande to
translate out of Spanshe into Englishe, the thre
bookes of Doktor Monardes of Sevill, the learned
Phisition, treatyng of the singuler and rare
veruens of certaine Hearbes, Trees, Oyles, Plan-
tes, Stones, and Drugges of the VVeste Indias,
for that the same booke is of high commendation
in Spaine, and other countreis, in sucheforte, that
in dede it might bryng in tyme rare profite to
my Countrie folkes of Englande, by w^ronder-
full cures of sundrie grete deseases, than other-

* 37.

w^rise

The Epistle

vise then by these remedies, thei were incu-
rable. And hauyng finished the same translatiō,
I determined to dedicate my trauaill therein, to
some rare louer of knowlēdʒe, for the vvor-
thiness of the vworke: and not findyng any
Gentleman of myte acquaintaunce, that vvas
more studious, and more delighted vwith lea-
ned vorkes, or that more cherished trauellers,
and louers of all good knowlēdʒe: determined
to dedicate the same to your vvorshippe before
all others, requestyng your vvorshippe to accept
the vworke, and to bee a patron of the same, and
to take it into your protection, since the matter is
of good substānce, and of mucbe value, and of
me truely & faithfully transtated into Englishe.
And since the aforesaid Medicines mentioned
in the same vworke of Doctor Monardes, are
now vby Marchauntes and others, brought out
of the VVest Indias into Spaine, and from Spain
hether into Englande, by suche as dooeth dailey
traffike thether, and that the excellencie of these
Hearbes, Trees, Oyles, Plantes, and stones, &c.
hath been knowen to bee so precious a remedie
for all maner of deseases, and hurtes, that maie
happe

Dedicatore.

happe vnto Man, VVoman, or Childe, thei haue
fledde verie muche from the olde order and ma-
ner of Phisicke, vvhiche vvas vased before,
that this vvas knovven, as thynges not so
healthfull as these are, and by greate experiance
thereof in Spaine, and other Countries, through-
ly and effectuously proued, to dooe the effectes
vvhiche is contained in this booke. And thus

I leaue your vvorshippe to the Almighty, be-
sechyng bym to giue you longe life, and for the

Common vwealthes sake that aduaunce-

mente, that your good nature, and
rare vertues doe vvel de-

serue. From London

the first of Oc-

tober.

1577.

Your vvorshippes duryng life
to commaunde. Iohn Frampton.



grossibus

Chlorophytum

which I will write

2020年3月23日

- 160 -

- 392 -

to common-sense from human



THE FIRSE PARTE OF
THIS BOOKE TREATETH OF
the thynges that are brought from the Occidentall Indias,
whiche serueth for the use of Medicine, and of the order that
must bee kept in the taking of the roote called Mechoa-
can, wherein are discouered greate secretes of
Nature, and greate experiances, made
and compiled by Doctor Monar-
dus, Phisition of Seuill.



In the yere of our Loide God, a
thousande, fower hundreth nine-
tie twoo: our Sspaniardes were
gouverned by sir Christofor Col-
lon, becyng naturally borne of
the countreie Genoa, for to disco-
uer the Occidenteall Indias, that
is called at this daie, the newe
worlde, and thei did discouer the
first lande therof, the xij. daie of October, of the saies yere,
and from that tyme unto this, thei haue discouered many
and sundrie Ilandes, and muche firme Lande, as well in
that countreie, whiche thei call the newe Spaine, as in that
whiche is called the Perna, where there are many Provin-
ces, many Kyngdomes, and many Cities, that hath con-
trary and diuers customes in them, whiche there hath been
founde out, thynges that never in these partes, nor in any
other partes of the worlde hath been seen, nor unto this
daie knowen: and other thynges whiche now are brought
unto vs in greate aboundinge, that is to saie, Golde, Sil-
uer, Pearles, Enieraldes, Turkeses, and other fine stones
of greate value, yet greate is the excesse and quantite that
hath come, and every daie doeth come, and in especiallie of
Golde and Siluer: That it is a thyng of admiracion, that

A. J. the

The first part of the thynges thei

the greate number of **Spilleons**, whiche hath colde besides
the greate quantitie of **Perles**, hath filled the whole wold,
also thei doe bryng from that partes, **Popingaies**, **Gref-
fons**, **Ayes**, **Lions**, **Gerfaucous**, and other kinde of **Hau-
kes**, **Tigers** wolle, **Cotton** wolle, **Graine** to die colours
with all, **Hides**, **Sugars**, **Copper**, **Brasill**, the woodie **Eba-
no**, **Anill**: and of all these, there is so greate quantitie, that
there commeth every yere, one hundred **Shippes** laven
thereof, that it is a greate thyng, and an incredele riches.

*Medicines
that our Oc-
cidentall In-
dias doeth
sende vs.*

And besides these greate riches, our **Occidentall In-
dias** doeth sende vnto vs many **Trees**, **Plantes**, **Herbes**,
Rootes, **Voices**, **Gummies**, **Fruites**, **Licones**, **Stones** that
are of greate medicinall vertues, in the whiche there bee
founde, and hath been founde in them, verie greate effectes
that doeth excede muche in value and price: All that afores-
aid, by so muche as the corporall healthe is more excel-
lent, and necessarie then the temporall goodes, the whiche
thynges all the wold doeth lacke, the wante whereof is
not a little hurtfull, accordyng to the greate profitte which
wee doe see, by the use of them doeth followe, not onely in
our **Spaine**, but in all the wold.

Aristo.

And this is not to bee merueiled at, that it is so, for the
Philosopher doeth saie, that all Countries doeth not gine
Plantes and Fruites alke: for one Region yeldeth suche
Fruites, Trees, and Plantes, as an other doeth not, wee
doe see that in *Creta* onely groweth the *Dipramo*, and the
Incense onely in the Region of *Saba*, and the *Almaciga*
onely in *Ilaude* of *Chio*, and the *Dinamom*, *Cloues*, and
Peper, and other splices onely in the Ilandes of the *Mo-
luka*, and many other thynges you haue in diuers partes of
the wold, whiche was not knownen vntill our tyme, and
the people of old tyme did lacke them, but the tyme whiche
is the discouerer of all thynges, hath shewed them vnto vs
greatly to our profitte, seyng the greate neede that wee ha-
d of them.

End

And as there is discouered newe regions, newe kyngdomes, and newe Provinces, by our Spanyardes, thei haue brought vnto vs newe Medicines, and newe Remedies, wherewith thei doe cure and make whole many infirmities, whiche if wee did lacke them, thei were incurable, and without any remedie, the whiche thynges althoough that some haue knowledge of them, yet thei bee not common to all people, for whiche cause I did preceve to treare, and to write, of all thynges that thei bryng from our Indias, whiche serueth for the arte and use of Medicine, and the remedy of the hurtes and deseases, that wee doe suffer and endure, whereof no small profite doeth followe to those of our tyme, and also vnto them that shall come after vs, the whiche I shall be the first, that the rather the followers may adde herevnto, with this beginning, that whiche thei shall more knowe, and by experiance shall finde.

And as in this Citee of Seville, whiche is the Porte and Skale of all the Occidental Indias, wee doe knowe of the moxe, then in any other partes of all Spaine, so I because that all thynges come firste hicher, where with better relation, and greater experiance it is knownen. I doe it with experiance and use of them this fourtie yeres, that I doe cure in this Citee, where I haue informed my selfe of them, that hath broughte these thynges out of those partes with muche care, and I haue made experiance thereto, with many and diuers persones, with all diligence and soezlighete possible, and with muche happye successe.

Of the Anime and Copall.



Wei doe bryng from the newe Spaine twoe kindestes of Rosine, that be bothe a like, muche one to the other, the one is called Copall, and the other Anime. The Copall is a Rosine verie white, and of muche brightness. It is

Of the Copal

A.ij. broughte

The first parte of the thynges that

brought in certaine greate peeces, whiche are like to pee-
ces of *Dilectron* verie cleare; it hath an indifferent smell,
but not so good as the *Anime*, with this *Copall* the Indians
did make perfumes in their sacrifices, and so the vle there-
of was frequented in the Temples, for their priestes.

Historie.

And when the first *Spaniardes* wente to those partes,
the *Piesteres* went out to receive them, with little firepot-
tes, burnyng in them this *Copall*, and giuyng to them the
smoke of it at their noses: we doe vse here to perfume with
it in deseases, hauyng coloures of the heade, in the place of
Incence, or *Anime*: it is hotte in the seconde degree, and
moiste in the firste, it is resolutiue, and softneth by some
watrie partes that it hath.

What Ani- me is?

The *Anime* is a gumme or Rosine of a greate Tree,
it is white, it draweth nere to the colour of *Incence*, it is
more oylie then the *Copall* is, it commeth in graines, as the
Incence doeth, although somewhat greater, and beyng bro-
ken, it hath a yellowe colour, as Rosine hath, it is of a be-
tie gracious and pleasaunce smell, and put vpon burnyng
cole, it doeth consume verie quickly.

In that as it differeth fro- mours.

Of the con- geled amber

It differreth from our *Anime*, that is brought from
Lenante, in the whiche it is not so white, or so bright, in so
much that thei doe saie, that it is spise of *Charabe* or *Suc-
cino*, whiche is called *Amber*, congeled, wherewith thei do
make *Beves*, but it is not sa, for that the *Charabe* is a kinde
of *Pitche*, that is fished in the *Germane Sea*, and it is ta-
ken out of the sea in greate peeces, with a dredge of Iron,
so that it semeth to come forthe of some *Fountaines*, into
the *Sea*, after the maner of *Pitche*, and beyng come forthe
vnto the cold ayre it congeleth, for because there is seen in
the same peeces, stickeis, and other superfluitiess of the sea,
cleauyng vnto it, and in this thei shall see the errore of thei,
that doeth saie that it was *Gumme of Alamo*, and others,
that it was of the *Pine tree*.

Hermolaus

Of our *Anime* *Hermolaus Barbarus*, a man moste lea-
ned

ned doeth saie, it is gathered aboue the place where Incense is gathered, and that lande of soile, is called *Amintin* and therefore it is called *Anime*.

That whiche is brought from the newe Spaine, is gathered from certayne Trees, of a reasonable greatnessse, by wate of incision, as the Incense, and *Almasiga* are gathered: we doe vse thereof for many infirmities, and principally for grifes of the heade, and paines thereof, caused of humours, or of colde causes, and for stuffyng in the head, that thereof doeth procede, after euacuation, perfumyng therewith the chambers in the Winter season, and where as is large infirmities, it doeth purifie and correcate the Aire, and thei doe perfume therewith their head catchers, when that thei doe goe to slepe, for them that doeth suffer paines in the heade, and occasions thereof, it doeth profite to perfume the heade of hym that is so diseased, it doeth comforte the heade vnto suche as hath it debilitied, or weakened, and doeth suffer paines by occasion thereof: thei doe put it also in plaisters, and in seere clothes, where as is neede of comfort, and to dissolve in especially colde humours, or winderesse, thei doe vse it also in place of Incense, as well in the perfumes, as in the afore saied.

It doeth comfort the braine, applied in the forme of a plaister, and euен so likewise the stomacke, and all partes being full of Venewes, made after the fashion of a *Sere cloche*, with the third parte of *Ware*, it taketh out the cold of any member, what so euer, being putte therepon for a long tyme, with refreshyng it. It is hotte in the second degree, and moiste in the first.

Of the gumme called *Tacamahaca*.



ND also thei doe bryng out of the new Spaine other kinde of Gumme or Rosine, that the Indians doeth call *Tacamahaca*, and the same name did our Spaniardes giue it, it is Rosine

Of the *Tacamahaca*.

A.113. taken

a Barbarion auctour. A place that is called *Amintin*, where our *Anime* is gathered, the vertue that is hath.

The composition that is hath.

The first part of the thynges that

taken out by incision of a tree, beyng as greate as a Wil-
lowe Tree, and is of a verie sweete smell, he doeth bryng
forthe a redde fruite, as the seede of Pionia.

*How the In-
dians doeth
use it.*

Of this Rosine or Gamme, the Indians doeth muche
use in their infirmities, chichly in swellynges in any parte
of the bodie, where thei be ingendred, for that it dissolueth,
ripeneth, and doeth marueilously desolute them. And euen
so, it taketh awaie any maner of greefe, that is come of a
colde cause: as humours, and windinesse, this the Indians
doeth use very commonly, and familiarly. And for this ef-
fecte the Spanyarde hath brought it.

*The proper-
tie that it
hath.*

His colour is of the colour of Galano, and some doeth
say that it is the same, it hath white partes like to Amonia-
co, it is of a good smel, and his cast is the like, so muche that
beyng caste vpon hotte burning coles, & giuyng the smoke
therof at the nose, of a woman that doeth sound or els hath
lost her vnderstanding by suffocation of the Mother, it doth
cause her to come quickly, and easely to her self. And the
Rosine putte to her nauell, after the maner of a plaster, it
causeth the Mother to kepe in her place, and the use there-
of is so muche emongst women, that the moste parte which
is spente thereof, is for this effecte, for that thei doe finde
them sellies very well with it, takynge awaie from them all
maner of chokynges of the Mother, and comfortynge the
stomacke. Some that bee curios, doeth adde thereto Ambar and Muske, and so it is better then it alone. It is
alwaies fyd, without melting of it self, vntill that it bee
all wholie wassed.

*Good for the
diseases of
the Mother.*

And where it doeth moste profite, is for to take awaie
any maner of greefe, caused of colde humours and windie,
and beyng applied vnto them in maner of a plaster, it doth
take them awaie, and dissolueth them with greate admira-
tion: it doeth cleave in suche sorte, that vntill it hath doen,
and wrought his effecte, it can not bee taken awaie, and the
self same it doeth, beyng put vpon swellynges, for that it
consumeth

*In any ma-
ner of greefe.*

consumeth and desolueþ them, and if there bee any disposition to ripen them, it doeth it, and very quickly.

It hath also for a remedie verified, and experimented, that it doeth profit muche in Reumes, and Runnypages, where so ever thei goe, as also it taketh them awaie, puttynge a small peice of linnen clothe wch this Rosine, behinde bothe the eares, or the eare of the parte whiche runneth, for that it doeth restraine the runnyng of them: and putt unto the temples of the heade, in maner of a plaister, it doeth wch halde the runniges and the flure, that runneth to the eyes, and to the parces of the face, it taketh awaie the toþe ache, although that the toþe be hollowe, by puttynge a little of this Rosine into the hollowe, and if ther wch the rotten toþe be burned, it maketh that the corruption goe no furþer, and beyng put after the maner of a plaister in the hollownesse of the necke, or græf of the shouþers, it taketh awaie the paines, mingled wch the third parte of storracke, and a little Amber made in a plaister, for the stomacke, it doeth comforþe, and causeþ appetit to meate: It helpeth digestion, and dissoluþ windynesse, after the same sorte put vpon the mauld of the head, it comforþeth, and taketh awaie the paines therewith. In the Sciatica, or paines of the hippes putte therewith, the effecte thereof is greate: and likewise it is so in all paines of the ioyntes: and in any paine of the bodie where so ever it be, chesly if it be of cold humours, or mire: For because wch his resolution, it hath partes of bindyng, that doeth give a marueilous comforþyng in ioyntes, or in hurtes of Scnewes, puttynge that alone, it doeth heale and cure them, for it is greate the exþerience, that we haue of it ingenderyng forþe wch matter it taketh awaie an extreme colde: ordinarily it is applied to all græfes: I doe mingle it therewith the third parte of yeallowe Ware, for that will be applied the better, and the use thereof is so celebrazed, that the people knoweth no other remedie for any græf, but the use of this Rosine, so that

*The vertue
that is hath:*

*In the toþe
ache.*

*It comforþeth
the stomacke.*

*In the griefe
of the heade.*

*In the Scia-
tica.*

*In the griefe
of the iointes.*

*In the hurtes
of Scnewes.*

In all græfes.

The first part of the thynges that

*His comple-
xion.*

it bee not inflamations very hotte , and also in them after the first furie is past , and the fearenesse thereof, it doeth profite muche for to dissolve the reste , it is hotte in the beginning of the thirde degree, and drye in the seconde.

Of the Gumme Caranna.

Caranna.



Hey doe bring from the firme Lande, by the waie of Cartagena, and number de Dios. A Rosin of the colour of Tacamahaca , somewhat cleare, and chynne, called in the Indians language, Caranna, and this woerde and name our Spaniardes haue geuen it, and it hath in maner the smel of the Tacamahaca, although it be somewhat more strong of smell, it is verie oyle, and so it clingeth faste without meltyng. For the clammines that it hath, it is a newe Medicine , and brought hicher about a senne yeres past , and the Indians doe vse it in their infirmities, against swellinges, and in all maner of grieses, and now in our partes it is muche exsteemed, for the greate effectes that it doth worke.

*The vertues
that it hath.*

It doeth profite and heale the same infirmities, that the Tacamahaca doth , but it doth his woork more spedily, so that many infirmities, wherein the Tacamahaca doth not so muche effect, the Caranna doth easely heale. There was one that did suffer paines of a shoulde, the whiche paines hee had suffered a long tyme, in suchc sorte, that he coulde not sturre his Arme, he hauyng vsed a great tyme the Tacamahaca : yet he healed not , vntill he had putte thereunto the Caranna, and therewith, in thre daies he remained whole, in the grieses of the Ioyntes , and the Gowte Arthriticus, it doeth a merueilous effecte , beyng applied vnto the griefe , so that it bee not an inflamation, of verie hotte Humour, it taketh it awaie, with muche easines. In olde swellinges, as well in humours as in windes , it dissolueth and doth dissolve them, in grieses caused by desluse or runnyng

*It healeth an
olde greefe of
the shoulde.*

*In the grieses
of the iointes.*

In swellinges.

ning of could humorz or mixed, it doth a merueilous effect, in all paines of the Sennowes, and griesse of the head, and grieses that there of doth proceede it doth profite muche. Surely, it is a medicine to dissolute and to take awaie grieses of greate efficacie, and doth make his wōke wth great certaintie in newe greene woundes, especially of the Sennowes, it doeth muche profite, and greatly in ioyntes, in the whiche I haue sien doen onely therewith very greate wōkes, it is an intercepting to staine the fluxe and runnyng of the eyes, and other partes applied behinde the eares, and in the temples of the head, it is verie fassie and oylie, and hot in more then in the seconde degree.

And it is to be noted, that all these Rosines the Indians doe gather them by waie of Incision, by geyng cuttes in the Trees of whiche forthwith the licour doth droppen out, and from thence they gather it.

Of the Oyle of the Figge Tree of Hell.

Hom Gelisco, a Prouince in the new Spaine, they doo bryng an Oyle or Licour, that the Spaniardes haue called, oyle of the Fig tree of Hell, for that it is taken out of a tree that is no more nor lesse then our Figge Tree of Hell, aswell in the Leafe, as in the Fruite, it is the same that we doe commonlie call Chatapucia, or Cherna, it is also milkye as ours is, for that it is more burnyng in the Indias for the grosseenes of the earth.

The Indians doe make this Oyle as Dioscorides doeth shewe, in the first booke the. xxx. Chapter, that is to pounde the Seede, and seeth it in water, and after it is sodden, then gacher the Oyle that swimmeth vpon it, wth a Spooone, and this is the maner to make Oyle of fruite and Seede, and Bowes of trees, it is verie muche frequented and vsed of the Indians, for expession or wringyng out the Toyske,

In grieses of
Sennowes,

In newe wōudes.

It staines the
runnyng of
the eyes.

Note.

Oyle of the
Figge tree.

How this
oyle is made.

The first parte of the thynges wher-

*Hit vertues
and effectes.*

*Cures in ge-
nerall.*

*It taketh a-
waie the
paine.*

*It healeth a
windy drop-
sie.*

*In grieses of
the stomake
and Colike.*

*In grieses of
the Iointes.*

*It healeth
soares.*

Historie.

*It vndoeth
opilations.*

they doe not knowe how to doe it, for lacke of knidwledge, this kind of oyle principally is better taken out this wate, then by expension. This Oyle hath greate vertues, as by the use thereof hath bene seene, as well in the Indias, as in our partes, and all that I will saye, is with verie greate expection, of muche use thereof in may persones, it doeth heale and cure all infirmities caused of cold humors, and windines, it doth dissolute all hardnes with mollification, and all inflammations brying windie, it taketh awaie all maner of paine in what parte soever it bee, chechlyf it come by any colde cause, or windines, for that in this, it maketh a merueilous woozke, dissoluyng greate windines, wheresoever they be, and especially in the bellie; and with this they doe heale a windy Dropsie, & likewise all kindes therof, annoyting therewithall the Belly, and Stomacke, takynge some droyses thereof with wine, or other licour appropiated, that it may auoide the cetrine water, and make the winde to bee expelled, and if they doe put it in any maner Glister, or Medicine, geuen so it doeth auoyde out the cetrine water, and doth expell Windes with more assurance then any other Medicine. In the grieses of the Stomake of cold humors, and windes, and Colicke, it maketh great effect, anointing therewith, and taking some droyses thereof, and principally they do this in that mortal disease called the Neon, whitch is a certaine filthines that purgeth at the mouth. It doeth auoide fleame principally, in grieses of the Iointes certain droyses of this Oyle taken with the broth of some fat foule, it doth empt awaie the humor that doth cause the paine, it doth heale the olde sores of the head, that doth yelde muche Matter.

A Gentleman that did vomit his Heate for many yeres did annoynt his stomake, with this Oyle, and therewith did heale and never vomited againe, it doth vndoeth Opilations of the inner partes of the body, and of the stomake, and of the Bowch, annoynting it therewith. And unto young chil-

men and Boyes, that can not goe to the Stole, annoyntyn g
the lower parte of the Manill with this Oyle, it doth v o
uoke them to the stoole, and if they haue wormes it doth ex
pelle them and killeth them, chiselle if they geue them a
droppe or twoo with Milke, or with some fat grosse thing.
And for thole that haue lost their hearing, it causeth it to be
restored to them, with a merueilous worke. As it hath bene
seen by many experiences. In grieses of Joyntes, and in
Grieses of swolninges, so that it come not of a verie hotte
cause, it taketh them away & doth dissolute them, any of the
members beyng drawen together, & annoynted with this
Oyle; they doe extende and the Sinowes be mollisid with
it, takynge awaie the griesse if that there be any; it taketh awaie
any markes or signes, wheresoeuer they bee in the
face, principally, and the Morphewe whiche women many
tymes bee troubled withall, annoyntyn g with this Oyle, it
doth take it awaie, and consume it, not with litle content
of them that blesse it, it is hotte in the first parte of the thirde
degree, and moyste in the second.

*It maketh
them goe to
the stoole.*

*For them
that haue
lost their hea
ring.*

*In grieses of
the Joyntes.*

*For the mem
bers drawnen
together.*

*It taketh a
ny markes or
signes of the
face.*

*His comple
xion.*

Of the Betumen vvhich is a kind of Pitch.



Here is in the Ilande of *Cuba*, certaine
Fountaines at the Sea side, that doth
cast from them a kinde of blacke Pitch
of a strong smell, whiche the Indians
doe use, in their colde infirmitie, oure
people doe use it there to pitche their
shippes withall, for it is well nere like
vnto Tarre, and they doe mingle therewith Tallowe, for
to make it Pitch the better. I do beleue that this is *Napta*,
whiche the auncient writers doe speake of, *Possidonis* doth
say, that there are twoo Fountaines in *Babilon*, one white
and the other blacke.

Betumen.

Napta.

This that they doe bryng from the Indias, we doe use

B. is. 16

His vertues

The first parte of the thynges that

it grieses of the Nacher, for that it doeth reduce the Nacher to her place, and if it rise on heigh, then put it to the Nostrelles, and if it come doun to the lower partes, puttynge thereto a wet Tent, with this Pitche, it causeth it to goe upwarde, to his place, and so likewise it doeth profite, beyng applied to colde Infirmitiess, as the other Medicines whiche we haue spokēn of, it is hotte in the seconde degree, and moist in the first.

Of liquid Amber and the Oyle of liquid Amber.

What liquid
Amber is.

LRom the newe Spaine they doe bring a Rosine that we do call *Liquid Amber*, & one like Oyle þ we do call Oyle of *Liquid Amber*, that is to say, a thyng that we doe moste set by, and precious as *Amber*, or Oyle thereof, both of them beyng of sweete smell, and of good sauour, and especially the Oyle of *Liquid Amber*, whiche hath his sauour moare delicate and sweete then *Amber*. A Rosine taken out by incision of certaine trees verie greate and faire, and full of leaues, whiche is like to *Euite*, and the Indians doe call it *Ococolli*. It doth carrie a thicke rinde, of the colour of Ashes, this rinde beeyng cut, it doth cast out the *Liquid Amber* thicke, and so the. doe gather it, and because the rinde hath a smell very sweet, they doe breake and mingle it with the Rosine, and when it is burned, it hath a better smell, in so muche, wheresoeuer the trees are, there is a most sweete smell through all the fields.

Whenthe Spaniardes came the first time, to that place where it groweth, and did see le siche sweete smell, they thought that there had been spices, and trees thercof.

Historie.

The use of
it.

There is brought muche quantite of *Liquid Amber* to Spaine, in so muche that they doe bringe many Pipes, and Varelles full thercof to sell for Perchaundise, for herre they doe profite thercof, to perfume in thynges of sweete smelles,

smelles, wakynge it in place of Storacke. For that the smok e
and smell doth seeme to be the same, and also they doe put it
into other confectiones of sweete smelles to burne, and such
like chinges, it doeth taste from it selfe smell without
burnyng of it, that wheresoeuer it be, it can not be hidden,
but doth penetrate many houses and stretes with his sweete
smell, when there is quantite of it.

It serveth muche in medicin, and doth therin great ef-
fect, soz that it healeth, conforteth, dissolueth, and mittiga-
teth the payne, putte to the Poule of the heade by it selfe,
or mingled with other chinges. Aromatall, it doth com-
forte the Braines, and taketh a wae che paines of any ma-
ner of griefe, proceedingy of it selfe, putte after the ma-
ner of a Plaister thereunto, it doth also mittigace, and
take awaye the paines. In grieves of the Stomake, it
doth a merueilous effect, applied after the maner of a Sto-
macher. For that it doth comforte the Stomake, and doth
dissoluie windes, and doth helpe digestion, and doth take a-
wae indigestions, it causeth the meate to be well digested,
it geueth lust to eate, it is made of *Liquid Amber*, spread a-
broad vpon a sheepe's skinne, in the forme of a breastplate,
mingled with a little Storake, Amber, & Muske, it is a plai-
ster which doth profite muche in all that I haue saied, there
is knownen of this plastrer verie greate experiance, in this
Cittie, for the good effect that it doeth, it is hot in the ende
of the seconde degree, and moyst in the first.

Of this *Liquid Amber* there is taken out the Oyle that
is called of *Liquid Amber*, the whiche in his smell is more
sweet, it is taken out of the *Liquid Amber* when it is newly
gathered, puttynge it in parte where it may distill of it selfe,
(the more subtil) is the perfectest and best of all.

Others there be that do preesse it, because the more quan-
tite thereof maye bee taken out, and they doe bryng it for
merchaundise, for that they doe dresse Gloves therewith for
the common people, and in this there is muche spexe.

*His workes
and effectes.*

*A maruei-
lous plaister.*

*Of the Oyle
of Liquid
Amber, and
how it is
made.*

The firste part of the thynges that

The use of
it in medi-
cine.

It is used in Medicine for many diseases, and it is of greate vertue to heale colde diseases; so to healeth excellently wch alpace; wheresoever it be applied, it doth dissolve and meltie any maner of hardnes, taking awaye the paines; it doeth dissidue the hardnes of the Mother, and doth open the osifications. It doth prouoke the monachy order of women, and it doeth make softe any maner of harte thyng, it is hot iurence in the thidde degree.

Note.

And it is to be noted, that many doe byng this Storacke so thinnes fro the Indias, not so good, for because that they make it of the bowes of the Trees, cut in pieces, and so den, and they doe gather the farnes that is vpon it, and that the Indians doe sell the busses of the Trees where the Liquid Amber is taken out, made in handefulls; the Indians do set in their market places for to buy amongest their Clothes, whiche causeth them to smell, as of the water of Angelles, and for this effect the Spaniardes doe use it.

¶ Of the Balsamo.

Bey doe byng from the newe Spaine that licour most excellent, whiche for his excellencie and meruelous effectes, is called Balsamo, an imitation of the true Balsamo, that was in the lande of Egypci, and for that it doeth liue greate woorkes, and doeth remady so many infirmities, that there was givene to it suche a name, it is made of a tree greater then a Bowndgarned Tre, it carrieth leauies like to Nettles: the Indians doe call it Xdo, and we do call the same Balsamo. It is made twoo maner of waies, the one is by the waie of incision, cuttyng the rinde of the tree, whiche is charne, geuyng hym many small cuttynges, of the whiche there commeth out a clammy licour, of coldeur white, but it is little and most excellent, and very perfise, the other fasshion is: that the Indians doe use to take out licour of the trees,

tree, which is a common vse amongst them, they do take the boomes and the greate pieces of the tree, and doth make them very small, as they can, and doe cast them into a great Kettle, with a good quantity of water, & do boyle them: un-
till they see it sufficently doeu, and afterwardes they leue it coale, and gather by the oyle that doth swimme thereupon with certayne shelles, and that is the Balsamo that cometh to these partes, and that commonly is vised, his colour is Alboine, whiche is likened to blacke, it is of most sweete
swell, & very excellent. It is not conuenient nor it ought to
be kept in any other vessel then in siluer, (Classe or Tinne
or any other thing glasse, it doth penetrate) and doth passe
through it, the vse thereof is onely in thinges of Medicin,
and it hath been vised of long tyme, well nere since the new
Spaine was discouered, for that incontinent the Span-
iardes had knowledge of it, because they did heale therwith
the woundes that they did receiu of the Indians: keeping
aduised of the vertue therof by the same Indians, and they
did see the saide Indians heale and cure themselves ther-
ewith.

When it firste came into Spaine, it was esteemed in
as muche as it was reason it shoulde be, for that they did see
it make marueilous workes, one ounce was worth the feyne
Duccates and bywardes, and nowe it is better cheape, the
firste tyme that they caried it to Rome, it came to be worth
one ounce, one hundredth Ducates, after that they brought
so muche and siche great quantity, that it is nowe of small
valewe, this doeth the abundance of chugs, and when
it was very deere all meane did profite of the vertue of it,
and after it came to bee worth so vile a pice: it is not so
muche esteemed, keeping the same Balsamo, and the selfe
same that it was, when it was worth the one hundredth Duc-
cates the ounce, surely if the Indias had not haue disco-
uered, but for the effect to sende vs this marueilous liour,
the labour had beene well emploied, whiche our Spaniar-

The estimation
that it
was taken in

Note.

Note.

The first parte of the thynges that

des haue taken, for that the *Balsamo* that was used to bee
had in Egypte, it is many yeres that it failed, because the
Vine from whence it came, dyed vp, wherby you haue now
none in the worlde. Our Lorde God did thinke it good in
place of that to geue vs this *Balsamo*, of the newe Spaine,
the whiche in my iudgement in Medicinall vertue, it is no
lesse then that of Egypte, accordançyng to the greate effectes
that we doe see in it, and the greate profite that it doeth,
whiche we doe see in Medicines, in thre wates, that is to
say, it is taken at the mouth, or it is applied outwardly, or
it serueth in thynges of Surgery, taken in the mornyng
fastynge, it healeth the shorines of breath, it taketh awaie the
diseases of the Bladder, it doth prouoke the Menstrues of
Wommen taken and applied with a Tent, it taketh awaie
the olde paines of the Stomake, sticking certayne dyppes
thereto in the mornyng fastynge, laide upon the palme of the
hande, and so continued: it doeth confort the Stomake, it
doth recalle the Liver, it maketh a good colour of the face,
it maketh a good breathyng, it openeth the Breast, it vndo-
eth opilations and conserueth youth. I knowe a persone of
much estimation that did use it, and beyng of great yeres:
did looke like a young man, and liued after he used it with-
out occasion of any euill, they whiche haue beeene troubled
with a drye cough haue used it, and to some it hath doen pro-
fite, and some gentle women that haue not brought for the
children, haue used it in Tentes for to pourge the Mother,
and it hath doen them good.

*The effectes
that it doeth
applying it
outwardly.*

It hath beeene also applied outwardly in all maner of
griefe caused of cold humours, or of windes. For that be-
yng continued, it taketh awaie verye well anye maner of
griefe, applied hot, with a little fether, and puttynge there-
vpon a clothe wet of the selfe same *Balsamo*, it is dissolu-
tive, and so it doth consume and vndoeth swellynges colde
and olde. It doeth confort any parte where it is put vnto,
the soveraine of the head it doeth confort merueilously,
and,

*The effectes
that it doeth
taking it at
the mouth.*

Historie.

and doeth take awaite the paines thereof, consuming any maner of humour or colde that is in it, it taketh awaite the Palsey by annoyng the soyle aude and necke, and the partes that bes impotente, and it doeth profite in all infirmities of Genewes, and shir kynges of them. But unto the Scomske it helpeþ the digestion, and doeth courage, dissoluyng windinelle, and if there bee any opilation, it doeth deloule it. And also the opilations of the inner partes it doeth mollifie and soften, it takeþ awaite the paine of the Stone in the Kidneys or Raines, beyng putt hotte vpon the paine, in the paines of the Beally or Stomake caused of calde or windes, beyng putt thereunto hot, or laied vpon hotte bread taken out of the Ouen, it taketh them away: It prouoketh Urine, and to them that can not pisse, applying it outwardly: and takynge a fewe droppes thereof it doeth unloose, and putteth it out, in the paines of the ioyntes it doeth meruelous effect, and in this it hath a special prerogative, in especially for the Sciatica, it doeth dissolue any maner of hardnes or swellying that remaineth in any suche griefe, in paynes of the Genowes it is a meruelowes remedy for all runninges of flaxe, it doeth dissolue and heale.

This Balsamo being aplyed in thinges of Surgery, doth great effectes, of it self, or mingled any other way with medicine, that hath vertue to doe the effecte wheresoever it is applied, and for to shewe all his vertues it will bee verye large. I doe remit it to hym that shall use it, that he maye make the mixture that shall be necessary and conuenient.

The Balsamo is verie common: and a used remedy for woundes being newe, for that it doth cure them by the first intention, glewyng together the partes without makynge matter, and where there be brewles that can not be glewed together, it doeth a verie good woozke, makyng his digestion with readines, and the rest of the woozkes that doeth appertaine to Surgery, it doth that whiche is conuenient

*The effect
that it doth
in thinges of
Surgery.*

The first parte of the thynges that

untill the wundes bee whole, and for this cause the bise
thereof is a commone Medicine in all surgery of poore sol-
des: Seeyng that with one medicine all effectes is doen
therewith, beyng necessarie, and it is a commone thing to
saie, that when one is hurte, let *Balsamo* be put thereunto,
and so they doe, and it doth heale, in the wundes of Hen-
nowes it maketh a merueilous effect, so that it doth both
cure and heale, it healeth better then any other Medicine
both, it resisteth colde, the wundes of the hedde it healeth
verie well, not hauyng the *Scull* broken, nor perished.

Any maner of woundes beyng fresshe it doth heale them
in any parte of the body wheresoever they be, so that there
be no more in it but a simple wounde. In ioyntes what man-
ner of wounde soever it be, it doth make marueilous woake
it is very commone the use thereof in this Cittie, in thinges
of woundes. For that you haue fewe houses, but you haue
Balsamo in them for this effecte, so that in woundyng of
any persone furthwith they goe to the *Balsamo*, for with lit-
tle quantite thereof they doe cure and heale, and many ey-
mes with puttynge of it once every thidre day, they do finde
the wounde whole. In olde sores aplien byt selfe, or with a-
ny other Dyument, it doeth mundre and cloase them vp
with fleshe.

In large feuers *Paroxysmales* beyng put halfe an hower
before the colde doeth come, vpon the mouide of the heade
very hotte, and beyng very well couerid with cloches, and
takynge forthwith sive or sise dropes thercof in wine, it ca-
tacheth a wate the colde, in thre or fourre tymes that they doe
it, it is of a sharpe saudour and sumwhat bitter, whereby is
seen the xrie partes and confortacie that it hath, it is hot
and xrie in the second degree.

I will not let to write of a certayne Hearbe, that the con-
querors of the newe Spaine do vse for the remedy of their
wundes, and shottes of arrowes, the whiche for them was
a greate remedy in their troubles, and it was discouered by
an

*Of the herbe
of Ibon In-
fante for
woundes.*

an Indian, whiche was Seruaunte to a Spaniarde called Ihon Infant. He was the first that vsed thereof, they did call it, and doe call it at this present daie, the Herbe of Ihon Infant, this hearbe is little, thei gather it greene, and beate it, and so they pue it simply upon the wounide, it doth restraine and stop the bloud, and if it be a wound in the fleshe, it doeth cause hym to growe together, and healeth hym by glewing the partes together, the woundes and the Senowes, and other partes ic doth comforde, imundise, and ingender fleshe in them vntill they be whole, and because they doonot finde this hearbe in all places, they doe bryng it made in powder, for that ic doeth the same effecte as bryng greene, and the powder doth ic better then the hearbe.

As this herbe is, so haue ybll many other in all the other partes of the Indias, that hath the same and other proper-ties that doth maruellous effectes: and for to write of everyone of them peticularly, ic were needesfull to make a greater volume, then we doe pretende in this that we shall create of.

Three thynges they doo bryng from our Occidental Indias, whiche at this day be celebrazed in all the world, & with them they haue made and doe make the greatest effectes that euer was made in Medicina, and neuer the like made, in any other Medicina, that vnto this daie hath been knownen. For that the office of all thre is to cure infirmities bryng without remedy incurable, and to doe the effectes that doe seeme to be thynges of wonder, and this is no-toxous, not onely in these partes, but in all the worlde: the whiche thynges are the woodde that is called *Guaicau*, the *China*, and the *Sarcaparilla*. And for that ic doth seeme that the *China* doth come from Portingall, and that the Portingales doe bryng it frō their Orientall Indias, and not frō ours, I wil say what is to be said, forward whē we do speake thereof. And therefore let vs beginne with *Guaicau*, as of a remedie that first came from the Indias, & as the first the
C.ii. belle

*The first parte of the thynges that
best of all, as experiance hath shewed, and the use therof in
so many peres.*

*¶ Of the Guaiacan, and of the
holie Wwoodde.*

*The wood of
the Indias.*



He Guaiacā that is called the wood of the Indias, was discouered soþwith, whē the firske Indias was founde, whiche was the Ilande of Sancto Domingo, where is great quanticie therof. There was an Indian that gaue knowledge thereof to his Maiſter, in this maner. A Spanarde that did ſuffer greate paines of the Poze, whiche he had by the companie of an Indian woman, but his ſeruaunte beynge one of the Philiſtines of that countrie, gaue vnto hym the water of *Guaiacan*, wherewith not onely his greuous paines were taken awaie that he did ſuffer: but healed verie well of the euill, with the whiche many other Spanardes, that were infec- ted with the ſame euill were healed, the whiche was com- muniſed iammediatly, with them that came from thence, heþer to Seville, and fro thence it was diuulged throughout all Spaine, and from thence through all the woorde, for that the infection wente ſowen abroade throughout, and surely for this euill it is the beſte, and the moſte chief remedie of as many as heþer vnto hach been founde, and with moſte auarauice, and moſte certaintie, it healeth and cureth the ſaid deſease, if thei bee well handled, and this water giuen as it ought to bee, it is certaine that it healeth moſte per- fectly, without turninge to fall againe, except the ſick man doe returne to tumble in the ſame boſome, where he tooke the firske.

Our Loide GOD would from whence the euill of the Poze came, from thence ſhould come the remedy for them. For that the Poze came into theſe partes from the Indi-

as, and firsle of all from *Sanclo Domingo*. The Poze bee so common emongest the Indians, and so familiare, as the Measelles bee unto vs, and well nere the mooste parte of the Indians, bothe menne and women hath them, without makynge therof any scruple, and thei came firsle in this sorte.

In the yere of our Lorde God 1493. in the warres that the Catholike kyng had in Naples, with kyng Charles of Fraunce, that was called greate heade: in this tyme sir Christofer Colon, came from the discouerte that he had made in the Indias, whiche was *Sanclo Domingo*, and other Ilandes, and he brought with hym from *Sanclo Domingo*, a greate number of Indians, bothe men and women, whiche he carried with him to Naples, where the Catholike kyng was at that tyme, who had then concluded the warres, for that there was peace betwene the twoo Kynges, and the hostes did communicare together, the one with the other. And Colon keeping come thecher with his Indians, the mooste parte of them wehe with the fruite of their countrie whiche was the Poze, the Spanyardes beganne to haue conuersation with the Indian women, in such sorte, that the men and women of the Indias, did infecte the Campe of the Spaniardes, Italians, and Almaines, the Catholike kyng had then of all these Nacions, and there were many that was infected of the euill. And after the hostes did comon together, the fire did kindle in the campe of the kyng of Fraunce: of the whiche did folowe that in short tyme, the one and the other were infected of this euill seide: and from thence it hath spred abrode into all the wold.

At the beginningy it had diuerse names: the Spanyardes did thinke that it had been giuen them by the Frenche men, and thei called it the Frenche euil. The Frenchemen thought that in Naples, and of them of the Countrie, the euill had been giuen them, and thei called it the euill of Naples. And thei of Almaine sayng that of the conuersation of the Spanyardes, thei came to it, thei called it the Spa-

*The names
that they did
put to the e-
uill tree.*

The first parte of the thynges that

*Opinions of
this euill.*

nishe Skabbe, and other called it the Measelles of the Indias, and with muche truthe, sayng that from thence came the euill.

Emorgesse the greate iubisitions of that tyne, there was greate opinions of the cause, and originall of the infirmitie. The one sorte said that it came of the euill De laucholietmeates, that the hostes of mercerie had eaten, as wilde hearbes, and muche gardeine hearbes, and rootes of hearbes, Alses, and Horles, and other like thynges, that ingender suche like infirmities, corruptyng and buringyng the bloode. Others there were that did aterioure it to the coniunctions of Saturne and Mars, and ther did applie it to the heauenly influence, with this ther did put divers and sundrie names: Some called it the Leproue, others Swin Rose, other Menegra, others the Deathly euill, others Elephansia, without certayne assurance what theseales ther were. For they were ignorant that it was a newe disease, and they would reduce it to some already knownen and written of, and then conmyng to our Guaiacan, whose name was put of the Indians, and of them very wel knownen, and so ther had called it and doe call it, in all the wold, and callyng it also the woodde of the Indias, of this woodde many haue written and muche, one sorte saying that it was Ebano, others that it was a kinde of Rose, and many other names whiche they haue named, it is a newe Tree and neuer seen in our partes, nor in any other of the discoueries, and as the countrie is newe: so is the tree a newe thinge.

*The descrip-
tion of the
Guaiacan.*

What soever he be it is a great tree, of the greatness of an Oke: he doth caste out many boves, the rinde it doeth cast from it beyng drye, greate, and full of Guimme, he hath his hart very greate, it is well neare like to blacke, all is very harde as muche and more then Ebano is. It doth caste a little leafe and hard, and every yere it doeth bryng forthe yeallow floweres, of the whiche they doe ingender a rounde fruite, with little kernelles whch in it, of the greatness of

Pedlets

*Guaiacan
an Indian
name.*

Pedlers, of thole Trees there are greate abundance in
Sancto Domingo,

And after this they haue founde another Tree, of the
kind of this Guiacan, in Saint Iohn de Puerto Rico, which
is an other Ilande neare to that of Sancto Domingo, such an
other tree as he is, sauyng that he is lesse, & the body of the
tree and the bowes are lesse, and it hath scarcely any harte,
and if it hath any it is very little, and that is in the body of
the tree. For that the bowes hath none, it is of more sweet
smell and more bitter then the Guiacan, that is nowe vsed
in our tyme, for gettynge that of Sancto Domingo, and for
his maruelous effectes they call it the holye Woodde, and
surely with reason: for that it is of a better workyng then
that of Sancto Domingo, whiche is seen by experiance, but
that the one and the other is a maruelous remedie, for to
cure the desease of the poxe: of the whiche and of every one
of them the water is made: and it is taken for this infir-
mitie, and for many others in this forme.

They take twoe ounces of the wood made small, and
two ounces of the blade of the same woodde broken, and
they cast it to steepe in thre Pottels of Water, in a newe
pot, that will holde sumwhat more, for the space of xxiiii.
houres: and the potteyng will sopt: they seeth it at a soft
fyre of kindled Coales, untill that two Pottels be sodde a-
wate, and one remaining. And this is to be seen at the time
the water is put to it, puttynge therein one Pottle, they do
put in a little Rodee, and they doe marke where the water
is of one Pottle, and by that measure and marke they shal
see when the wood is sodde awaie, and the one Pottell re-
maineth, after the water is sodden, they put it to coole, and
doe straine it, and keepe it in a glasse vessell, and forthwith
upon the saide sodded woodde, they cast soure Pottels of wa-
ter, and they seeth it till one bee sodden awaie, and this wa-
ter must be strained and kepte aparte: and it must be taken
in this forme.

How the
water of the
wood is made.

Aster.

*The maner
to take it.*

The first part of the thynges that

After that the sick man is pourged with the counsell of a Phisition, let hym be put into a warme Chamber, and kept from the colde and from ayre, and beynge layed in his bedde, that he take early in the mornyng tenne ounces of Water, of that which was first made well warmed, and let hym be clothed, so that he may sweate wel, and let him kepe his sweat at the least two houres, and after he hath swet, let hym be made cleane of his swet, and take a warme Shirte, and the rest of his Linen clothes, and foure howers after he hath swet, let him eate Reasings, Almonds and Bisket, and this in reasonable quantite, and let hym drinke of the water that was made at the seconde tyme, the quantity that he hath neede of, and of the selfe same let hym drinke in the day tyme, and eight houres after he hath eaten, let him retourne to take the first water, and let hym take other ten ounces well warmed, and then sweate other twoo howers, and after his sweat let hym be made cleane, and then take warme cloathes, and one hower after he hath swet let hym make his supper of the same Reasings, Almonds, and Bisket, and drinke of the seconde Water, this order he muste haue the first fiftene daies, excepte he hath notable weake-nesse, and in such case he must bee succoured with geuyng hym to eate of a little Chiken, ioyntly, with the rest of the Diet, and in them that be leane, that can not beare so much Diet, it is sufficient that they take it for nine daies, and at the ende of them he may eate a little Chiken rosted, and if in case the sick man be debilitid, and that he can not suffer the Diet, let hym haue from the beginningyng a very small Chiken, goyng forward increasingyng in the proces of tyme, and beynge past the 15. daies, let hym retourne to pourge himselfe at the sixtene daies, and let him take the waight of ffey shillinges of the substaunce of *Canafistola*, taken out by Strainer oþ other thinge respondent thereunto, and that day let hym drinke no stronge Water, but of the simple, and the next day after the Purgation, let hym retourne to take according

accordyng to the aforesaid order. Takeynge in the morning
and in the euening the stonge water with his sweatings,
and eatynge and drinkyng the same. Sayng that in place
of a Chiken he may eate halfe a rosted Pullet, or sumwhat
more, & this seconds tyme let hym take it for other xx. daies,
in the whiche tyme he may go rising in his chamber, beyng
apparelled and kepte warme. And at the ende of them, he
shall recourne to purge hym selfe an other tyme, and hee
must haue a speciall care to keepe good order, and after hee
haue taken the water for other xx. daies, keepynge hym
selfe from Women and from Wine especially, and in place
of Wine, that he drinke the simple water of the wood, and
if hee will not doe it, then drinke of water sodde with Anis
seede or Fenell seede, suppyng little at night and eating no
fleshe.

This is the besste waie that the water of the wood shold
be taken, whiche doeth heale many infirmities incurable,
where other Medicines could not doe this effecte, and this
water is the besste remedy that is in the worlde, for to heale
the disease of the Poore, what so euer or of what kinde so e-
uer it bee, for that it doeth vnpoote it, for euer without any
more commyng againe. And in this it hath his principall
privilegia and excellencie, this Water is good for the
Dropsy, for the shorthenes of heach, for the Falling sicknes,
for the euill of the Bladder, and of the Raines: for the pap-
nes of the Toyntes: for all euills caused of colde Humors:
for pectolicie, and for large and impertinate diseases, where
the ordinarie benefites of Phisitions hath not profited.
Chisely it doth profite where the euill dispositions be, that
haue proceeded at any tyme of the euill of the Poore. There
be many that with this wood haue made manye mixtures,
makynge Syropes thereof, and surely it doth good effect.
But my iudgemente and opinion is, that hee whiche shall
take the water of the wood, let hym take it in the maner as
it is saide, without any minglyng thereof, for that by expe-

*The diseases
that this wa-
ter doth
heale.*

The first part of the thyngez ther

perience it hath been seen so to make the better worke, this water maketh good the teech, makynge them white, and as-
firmynge and fastning them, by continuall washing of them,
it is hot and drye in the second degree.

Of the China.

 *He Seconde Medicineth cometh from our Indias, is a roote called the China, it doth seeme that I shoulde slander it, to say that the China is in our Occidentall Indias, commonly the Ioyningales doe bring in from the Orientall Indias.*

By this you shall understande, that Sir Frauncis Dr Mendoza, a worthy Knight, when hee came from the newe Spaine and Peru, he shewed to mee a greate Roote, and other little rootes, and he asked mee what rootes they were, I aunswere that they were Rootes of the China, but that they did seeme to mee to bee very freshe. Hee said to mee, that so they were, and that it was but a litle tyme past that thei had been gathered and brought from the newe Spaine. I did maruell that they had it there, for I did beleue that in the China onely it was, hee shide unto mee, that not onely there was in the newe Spaine China: but that also we should see brought great quantite of Spicerie from the place the whiche that China came from. And I did beleue it when I sawe the contratacion that hee made with his ma-iestie, for to bring to Spaine greate quantite of spicerie, that he had begonne to set and to plant, and I sawe greene Ginger brought from thence, as also the China.

The whiche is a Roote like to the roote of a cane with certaine knottes within it, is white, & some with the white nesse haue an albowne colour, it is red without, the besse is the freshest, that whiche hath no holes, and if it be weightie, shd not worme eaten, and that it haue a facnes as if it were congeled, and it hath an vsauery tast. This Roote doeth growe

*China of our
Indias.*

Historie.

growe in the *China*, whiche is the *Oriental Indias* neere to *Siria* and *Siricana*. It groweth neere to the *Sea*, onely with the roote they do profite themselves, with the whiche the *Indias* be healed of greuous diseases. And so they haue it in great estimation, they doe heale all maner of large diseases therewith: and also the sharpe diseases: especially *Agues* with the *Water* of it, prouoking *Swets*, and by this waie they heale many. It doeth prouoke *Swet* marueilously.

It is well nere xxx. yeres that the *Portingales* broughte it to these partes with greate estimation, for to heale all maner of diseases, and in especially the disease of the *Pox*, in the whiche it hath doen great effectes, and the *Water* is geuen in this forme.

The sick person beyng purg'd as is most conuenient, they shall take one of the rootes and curte them small unto the thicknes & greatnes of a three peny pece, and so beyng cut: they shall waie one ounce, and caste it into a newe *Pot*, and thereupon they shall put thre *Pottels* of *Water*, and it shall be a steyping there xxiiii. howers, and the *Pot*te beyng stope, let it leech at a soft fire of kindled *Coales*, vntill halfe be sodden awaie, and one *Pottell* and halfe remaine, and this is to be knowen by the order of the *Measure* as aforesaide, in the *Water* of the *Wood*. And after that it is colde, let it be strained and kept in a glassed vessell. There must bee care taken, that it stande in some hote or warme place neere to the fire, for that therewith it doeth preserue the better and durtch longer tyme, before it be corrupted.

The sick man being put into a cloase conuenient chamber, he shall take in the morning fastynge tenne *Dunces* of the saied water, as hote as he can suffer it, and he shall procure swet, and he shall keepe it two howers at the least, after the swet he shall be made cleane, and he shall take a *Shirte*, and cleane clothes, and warme them, hee shall lye twoo or thre howers in the bedde quietely, after he hath sweat. And

Historie.

*The maner
how to gine
the water of
the China.*

*How it must
be taken.*

D.ij. after

The first parte of the thynges that

after lette hym apparell hymself, and beyng well warmed he shall remaine in his Chamber, in the whiche he shall bee keapt from the colde and ayre, with all the pleasure of good company and conuersation, he shall eate at xi. of the clocke, halfe a Chiken sodden, or a quarter of a Henne, with litle Salt. At the beginnyng of Dinner he shall drinke a dishefull of Brothe, and forthwith he shall eate of the Pullet. At the beginnyng a litle, and he shall ende with Marmelade. The drinke shall be of the water he cooke in the morynge, for that here is no more then one water, he may at the beginnyng after the Brothe is taken, beginne to eate Reasinges, without their litle Graines, or Peunes without their stones, the bread muste be of the Cruste of bread, well baked, or Bisket. If he will drinke in the daie tyme, he may dooie it with takyng of a litle Conserua, and drinke of the same water, and beyng eight hower past his Dinner, let hym ly downe in his Bedde, and take other tenne Dunces of the same water, the whiche beyng hotte he may take, and procure to sweate, two hower after he hath swet, let hym be made cleane, and take a cleane shirte, and cleane clothes warme, and after one hower let hym sup with Conserua, Reasinges and Almondes, with some Biskette, and drinke of the self same water, and laste of all Marmelade, vpon the whiche he may not drinke. This he may contynue xxx. daies continually, without neede of anye knore Purgacion then the first, and he may sit by so that he go wel cloathed, taking in this tyme all content and mirthe, and keeping hym selfe from all thinges that maie offend hym.

After that he hath taken this water in this sorte, he must keepe good order, and good gouernement for certe dayes continually. And he must drinke no Wine, but water made of the *China*, that was before sodden, the whiche they shall keepe after it is sodden, putting it to dry in a shadow place, and that *China* beyng dry, must be kept to make water for other certe daies, to drinke after the takyng of the water.

Setting

Notes.

Setting one ounce thereof in three Bottels of water vntill one halfe be sodden awaie, and this water let him drinke continually. And aboue all thynges let hym keepe hym self from Clomen, he muste alwaies haue care, that as well in the water of xxx daisies, as in the water of the fortie daisies, that the China be in the Water xxxiiii hours before it bee sodden.

There be many diseases healed with this water, all kind of euill of the Pore, all olde Sores, it doth vndoe all swellinges and knobles, it taketh awaie the paines of the Joines, that they call the Arthritica Goue, and any other kind of Goue that is in any particular member or place, and especially the Sciatica, it taketh away olde paynes of the head and of the stomake. It healeth all maner of runnings of Rewmes, it doth dissolute Opilations, and doth cure and heale the Drosysie. It maketh a good colour in the Face, it taketh awaie the Jaundies, and all euill complexion of the Liver, it doeth rectifie, and in this it hath a greate prerogative. And by this meanes these infirmitiess are healed. It healeth the Palsie and all diseases of Senowes, it healeth all diseases of Urine, it taketh awaie Melancholie, and all infirmitiess caused of colde diseases. It doeth confort the stomake, it doth dissolute windes merueilously, also Agues long and sharpe. As quotidianes, takyng this water as it is conuenient, it doeth roste them out, and taketh them awaie. The whiche thing it doeth by prouokynge of swet, in this it doth excede all other Medicines, and some will say that in Pestilent Agues by prouokynge swet it healeth them. It is dyte in the seconde degree with very litle heate, the whiche is seen by the other Waters of the Wodde. And Sarcap-
rilla whiche doth heate and geueth dyte: this doth not, nor leaueth any impression of heate.

Surely it is a notable Medicine, in the whiche I haue founde greate effectes for the Diseases whiche I haue spoken of.

The diseases
that be hea-
led with this
water.

His comple-
xion.

Note.

The first part of the thynges they

doth bring into a Of the Sarcaparillia.

The tyme
since that
the Sarca-
parillia
came.



The descrip-
tion of the
Sarcaparil-
lia.

Sarcaparil-
lia of the Hu-
nduras.

Chosing of it

Of the name

The Sarcaparillia is a thyng come
to our partes after the Chma. It
may be twenty yeres that the vise-
ther of caine to this City. It first
came from the new Spaine, and
the Indians did vse it for a great
Pedicine, with the whiche they
did heale many & divers diseases.

It is a Plant whiche doth cast
many Rootes vnder the grounde, being of a yarde long,
and of the colour of a cleare Tawny, and some tymes the
Rootes goe so deepe: that to take them out all, it is neede-
full to digge a mans length. He doth caste certaine bowes
full of knotis: that quicklye they doe dyie, and we know not
that they haue caried flowers of fruite.

After that the Sarcaparillia of the newe Spaine was
founde: there was also found in the Hunduras, an other sort
being better, and of better effectes, it is knownen to bee of
the Hunduras, because that it is of colour Tawny, and gro-
ser then that of the newe Spaine, the whiche is white, and
sumwhat like to peallowe, and more small, and so the Sar-
caparillia that is most like to blacke is best.

It ought to be fresh, and in this is all the goodnes ther-
of, it is knownen to be fresh by not being worne eaten. For
that the fresche breaking of it at the length, in the middest it
maketh a running out to the ende, and casteth out no duste,
and the heauier it is, the better it is.

The Spaniardes did call it Sarcaparillia when they saw
it. For the greate likenes that it hath with the Sarcaparillia
of these partes. I haue it for certaine that the Sarcaparillia
of these partes, and of the Indias, is all one, and the verie
same that oures is. The whiche I haue experimented many
tymes, and oures doth the effect that the Sarcaparillia of the
newe

new Spaine doth, and it is like unto that of the *Hawdarks*, it is of a bitter taste, and not very sharpe, and the water that it doth cast from it hath no more sauour then barley water hath.

The use of this hearbe at the firste did differ much from that as is nowe vsed, for that they gaue it as the Indians did, in the heatyng of their sicke sothes, and surely it did very greate effectes. But the delicatenes of oure tyme doeth cause that it should bee vsed and geuen as the Water of the Wood is, at the beginnyng they cooke of the *Sarcaparilla* muche quancicie, more then halfe a pounde, and did cut it small and breake it, and cast it in a quancicie of water, and beynge well wet they did beate it in a *poister* a good while, in such socht that it was made like to a *Jelye*, and they did straine it, pressyng it verie well, for there came out of it the likenes of a thicke *Drinke*. And of that they cooke in the mornyng hot, one good Cup full, and then the Paciente clathed hym selfe well, and swet two howers, and if in the day tyme they woulde drinke any thing, it shoulde be of the selfe same thicke drinke, so made by expreßion hot, and then they swet as muche as in the mornyng. This order they had for thre daisies continually: without eatyng or drynkyng of other meate, sauyng onely that thicke drinke, taken out by pressyng or straining of the *Sarcaparilla*, and after this socht I gaue it at the beginnyng many tymes, and surely it did greate effecte, and many sicke people did better heale, then they doe nowe with this other fashyon.

After there was an other forme and maner to give it, and is that whiche is nowe vsed; in this sorte, ther take twoo ounces of *Sarcaparilla*, ther walse it and cut it small, and then theri put it into a newe pearethen pot, and therbyyon theri put thre pottelles of water, and theri put it in the water to steepe twentie and fower howers, and after the potte beynge well stopte, it must seeth on a softe fire of kindled coales, vntill the twoo pottelles bee sodden awaie, and

*How it was
vsed in the
beginning.*

*Take this
for three
daies.*

*The fashyon
how it is now
vsed and ge-
uen.*

the

The firste part of the thynges that

the one remaine, the whiche maie bee knowne by the order
of the measure, that wee spake of, and when it is colde, let it
bee strained into a glasse vessell, and vpon the selfsame
Sarcaparilla that is sodden: Let there bee so muche water
caste, that the porre bee fild; and let it boyle a reasonable
tyme, and kepe in a vessell glasse.

The maner
how to gene
it.

And the sick manne being purged, as it semeth moste
conuenient, and placed in a warme chamber, he muste take
in the morynge ten ounces, of the first water of the *Sarcaparilla*; and he must swewe at the least two howeres, and af-
ter swewe he must be made cleane of his swewe, and take a
warne shurte, and warne clothes, and the same he muste
 doe at night, eigh howeres after he hath eaten his Dinner,
chamgyng his shurte, and hott apparell. He muste dine at
a leuen of the Clocke, and drinke one hower after he hath
swewe: at night eatyng nothyng but Realsynges, Almon-
des, and Bisketts, and drinke of the seconde water. Lette
 hym kepe this order fiftene daies, and if he bee weake, giue
 hym a little rosted chiken, and increasyng it in the procelle
of tyme, at the least he must kepe his bedde nine daies: At
the first beginning and the rest in his chamber, kept from
colde, and from ayre, and at the fiftene daie he must bee pur-
ged, with a soote and an easie medicine, and likewise at the
thirtie daie, in suche soote, that all the order that wee haue
saied bee kepte, as in the maner of the takyng of the water
of the woodde. And like wise after the thirrie daies, he
must haue good gouernemente, for other fourtie daies, not
drinking any wine, but simple water made of the said *Sarcaparilla*, and keeþyng hym self from women. This is the
ordinarie maner in takyng of the water of *Sarcaparilla*,
whiche at this daie is vedy, and because I haue experiance
of other wates, that bee of greate secrete, and of greate ef-
fectes, I will write them here, for because all, whiche is in
the *Sarcaparilla* maie bee saied and declared: syng it is the
Medicine that is moste vseyed, and that we doe see in it so
greate

greate effectes.

I doe make a Sirupe, that many yeres hath beene celebated, and had in estimation in this erle, and in all Spaine for that it is xxvi. yeres that I did use it for the desease of the Pore, and for other infirmities, the whiche doeth not heate, nor inflame, but with greate temperaunce, according to his graduacion, it worketh his good effectes. The erle, for whom this chyng was ordained and devised, was for *Panielion de Negro Lenones*, who was cured of many phisitions, and hauyng taken the water of the woodde, and other speditions, he was well nere consumed: and with a greevous swelpping soe vpon his shinne bone, and great paines in it, he tooke it, and healed verie well. This sirupe I haue used to many people, for the infirmitie that the Sarcaparilla doeth proesse for, and the woodde, and for many other, and it hath a good working by degrees: for that the dizensse of the woodde is taken awaie, and the heat of the Sarcaparilla, and it is made in this forme.

There must bee taken twoo ounces of Sarcaparilla, and fower ounces of *Pauo Sancto*, whiche is the holie woodde, prepared as it is saied, and thre dozen of *Acocifas*, a fruite of Spaine, without their stones, and two dozen of *Prunes*, without their stones, and halfe an ounce of the flowres of *Burrage*, and an other halfe ounce of *Violettes* and some graines of *Barley* made cleane, that is to saie, the huskes taken awaie. All these chynges lette them bee raste into thre pocelles of water, and lette them bee sooden on a softe fire, vntill it come to one pocell, and then let it bee strained, and to tenne ounces of this sechyng, lette there bee putte one ounce of the Sirupe of *Violettes*. Let it be taken hote in the morwyng, and at night in the dyde as is saied. In the rest of the water, kepyng swete if there bee any, and althoough there come litle, yet thei heale. Thei maie eate a litle *Chicken* from the first daie, with the rest of the diet, and drinke the simple water of the Sarcaparilla.

A Sirupe or
drinke of
Sarcaparilla
most excellent

The descrip-
tion of the
Sirupe or
drinke.

The firſte parte of the thynges that

whiche is to bee made with halfe an ounce of *Sarcaparilla*,
ſodden in fower pottelles of water, vntill one or ſomewhat
more, bee ſodden awaie.

*The thynges
that this
drinke doeth
proſite in.*

This order doeth heale all kinde of euill of the *Pore*,
and all the infirmities that we haue ſyoken of, that the wa-
ter of the woodie doeth heale, and the *China*, and the *Sarcaparilla*. And to repeate it, it ſhall bee to long and to proli-
ous, because it is ſufficiently declared before. For ſurely in
this ſimple water, and in the forſailed decoction, I haue
founde greate effectes, as well in the infirmities where is
ſuſpected the euill of the *Pore*, as in large and impotunate
difeaſes, the whiche the common remedies of phisick haue
not proſited, althoſh thei proceeded not of the *Frenche*
Pore, it doeth cure and heale theim, as it is ſeen by the
woorke of hym that uſe it.

*An other
drinke of the
*Sarcaparilla**

*The thynges
that this
drinke hea-
leth.*

*Sarcaparilla
in pouder.*

There is an other ſirupe to bee made of the *Sarcaparilla*, whiche is; takyng eight ounces of *Sarcaparilla* beynge
brokē and cutte, and ſeeth it in fower pottelles of water,
vntill thre bee ſodden awaie, and the one remaine, and in
the water as ſhall remaine, putte to fower pounde of *Su-
ger*, and make it a perfecte ſirupe. And of this ſirupe,
take thre ounces in the Mornynge, and thre at Nighe, ea-
ting good meates, and ſuppe little, and drinke onely the
ſimple water of the *Sarcaparilla*, and goyng abroade out of
his houſe, doyng his busynesse. There is healed therewith
many difeaſes of che ſaied, without giuyng any moleſtatiō
in the dealyng of cheim. And this wylle bee taken till the
ſirupe bee all conuſomed.

Also this *Sarcaparilla* is taken in pouder, in this ma-
ner. Thei take the *Sarcaparilla*, and take awaie from it the
barre within it, and drye it and grinde it, and thei dooe ſiftre
it through a ſeeue of *Silke*, and maketh it in pouder. Of
this pouder is taken in the infirmitie of the *Pore*, or ſpice
of cheim, takyng the waight of ſix pence of the pouder, and
dinkyng it with the ſimple Water of the *Sarcaparilla*, tak-
yng

kyng it in the Mornynge, and at Nighe, as muche when he goeth to bedde. He muste eate good meates, and drinke no Wine, but the simple water thereof. It shall dooe well he bee purged that shall beginne to lie it.

And although that this powder doeth heale many de-
seases large and tempoiall, one cure it doeth maruellously,
whiche is the saltē Fleume of the handes and feete, in this
forme. The sickē manne beynge purged, and allō without
purgynge, if he can not otherwile doe, he shall take the pou-
der, as it is laid, and in the saltē Fleume, he shall put with a
Feather, a little of the water of Sublimatum, watered with
Rose water, that it doe bee simple, and after it is put in all
partes where the saltē Fleume is, then let there bee put up-
pon it a plastrer, that is called of *William Ferrerius*, or *Die-
Palma* spread abrode thynne upon *Latte* or *Caffra* putte
in altpartes where the simple water of *Sarcaparilla* is put.
This must bee doneen every daie, for that in sixtene daies he
shall bee perfectly whole. This doeth iudicacie and doeth
incarnacie, and doeth Iustine without hauyng neede of any
other Medicinē, ioyntly with the Powder, and the simple
water of *Sarcaparilla*, whiche we haue spaken of. This is
of so greate effect, and experimentered, as thei shall the dy the
woode that shall use it, for surely cheyned bee whole.

The vle of the water of the *Sarcaparilla* is to drinke at
this daie in this forme, as in iacion, that is to sayle it to any
desease, and it is come to so muche, that in any maner of
Reumeis or runnynges, or woundes, the euill of wemen,
of the Mother, or any other cause or occasion what soeuer,
so that it bee not in Feueris or other sharey deseases, for the
whiche thei take the simple water of the *Sarcaparilla*, and
this is at this daie to put in vle, that is like sorte you shall
 finde sodden water of *Sarcaparilla* keepynge simple in many
houses, as ordinarie water in pearethen vessalles, and sure-
ly it doeth greate effectes, and doeth remedie large and im-
portunate deseases. Truche it is, that goeth persones that

The Saltē
Fleume is
cured here-
with.

to see
what is
done

The vertus
of the water
of *Sarcapa-
rilla*.

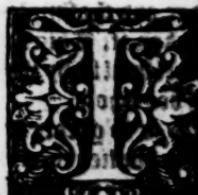
The first part of the thynges that

hee hote of complexion, it dooeth heate them more then is
conueniente, and so they can not drinke it, and moste of all
if that the Liver be very hote, for that it heaþer to muche.

In wemens deseases, as well of the Mother, as of cold
humours, it dooeth good effectes, and doeth maruestouſlie
dissolute windes. And in personeſ that be subiecte to muche
euilles, and espiall of Reumes, and oþre greeves and de-
ſeases caused of euill humours, and if they run this course,
with the countinuance thereof, they shall receiue manerly
yrouche and benefice, and it dooeth heale all deseases whiche
they never thought to heale of. His complexion is hote and
drye well here in the ſeconde degree. All theſe waters muſt
bee giuen in Sommer, or in the ende thereof: it is better
that it excede in heate then in colde.

¶ Of the blood Stone, and of the Stone for the deſeases of the ſtone of the Kidneſſe and Raineſſe.

The ſtone of
the Blood.



þet doe dryng from the newe Spaine,
twoo ſtones of greate vertue, the one
is called the ſtone of the Blood, and
the other is a ſtone for the deſease of
the ſtone in the Kidneſſe and Raineſſe.
The Blood ſtone is a kinde of Jasper
of divers coulours, ſomewhat darke
full of ſpincles, like to blood, beying of coulour redde, or
þe whiche ſtones the Indiens doeth make certayne Har-
des boþe greate and small.

The uſe thered, boþe here and there, is for all flue of
blood, of what partes ſo ever it bee, of the Nose, or of the
Mēnſtrues, or of the ſtales, and of Cloundes, or of þat
whiche is calle out of the mouth. The ſtone muſt be weate
in colde water, and the ſlieke manne muſt take hym in his
righte hande, and ſet hym to tyne weate hym in colde wa-
ter.

ter. In this sorte the Indians doe use the. And as touchyng the Indians, thet haue it for certaine, that touchyng the same stone, in some parte where the bloud runneth, that it doeth restraine and in this thet haue greate truste, for that the effecte hath been seen. It doeth profite also hauyng it holden, hanged, or tied in the same parte where the bloud runneth, so that it couthe on the fleshe. Of this stone we haue seen greate effectes, in launcyng of bloud. And some that doe suffer the Hemeroidal sluze, haue remedied theim selues with makyng Rynges of this stone, and wearyng them continually upon their fingers. And also in the Menstruall sluze of women.

The other Stone, whiche is for the desease of the stone in the Kidneys or Raines, the fynest of them are like vnes Plasma of Esmeraldes, whiche is likened to greene with a Millishe couller, the greatest is the best: thet bryng them made in divers formes and shadys, for so the Indians haue them in oþre tymes, some like to lilles, other like to the heynes of birdes, other like to billes of Popagates, other like to rounde Beadstones, but all pearlyed through, for that the Indians did use to weare theim hanging for the effecte of the griefe of the stone or stonake: for in these twoo sicknesse it doeth marueilous effectes.

The chief vertue that it hath, is in the paine of the stone in the Kidneys and Raines, and in expelyng of Sande and stone. In so muche, that a gentleman whiche had one of the here, the best of them that I haue seen, hauyng put it to his arme, he doeth make hym to expell and caste out muche sande, that many tymes he doeth take it awaie, for that he thinketh that it doeth hurse hym for report ouþ so mucho, and in takynge it awaie, he reaseth to caste any from hym, when he feeleth the paine of the stone, and pacyng hym to againe, it doeth take it awaie incontinente, with expellyng of muche Sande and smal stones. I haue seen it carried to persones that haue been grieved with greate griefe, and

*The Stone
for the de-
sese of the
granell stone
in the kidneis
or raines.*

The firste part of the thynges that

paines of the saied desease, and puttynge it to them, thei dor
soþ with expellche sande and the litle stonys, and remain
clere thereof.

A proper-
tie hidden.

This stone hath a properie hidden, by the whiche mea-
nes he doeth greate effectes, to preserue that thei fall not in
to the paine of the saied desease, and after it is come it ta-
keth it awaie, or diminisched it. He doeth make the sande to
bee expelled in greate abundance, and likewise stonys. It
taketh awaie the heate from the raines of the bucke, it pro-
ficieth in grieses of the stomacke, put to it: and aboue all it
preserueth from the saied gries.

My Ladie the Duchesse soþ that she had in shoþe tyme
thys tyme, exceedingyng paines of the stone, she made a brace-
let of them, and she vþed to weare it at her arme, and sylver
she put them to her arme, she never had more paines of the
stone, and soþe þat þe þey are muche esteemed, and
now thei bee not so lone had, as at the beginnyng: soþ that
these stones onely the gentlemen, and richmen haue them,
and with reason, because thei do suche maruelous effectes.
An other stone there is that doeth beaþe the salt fleume,
the whiche I doe knowe by hearefaie, but I haue seen none
of them.

¶ Of the VVoodde for the cullis of the Raines, and of the Urine.



þeþeþ dor byng from the newe Spaine, a
certayne woodde that is like unto the woodd
of a Peare tree, gross and without knottes:
the whiche thei haue vþed thereto many yeres
in that partes, þoþ the padnes of the Raines
and of the Stone, and for the infirmitiess of the Urine.

The fyrste tyme that I sawe it vþed (made bee aboue
þyb. yeres past) there was a Pilot that was sick of the
Urine,

Trine and of the Raines, and after that he had vsed it, he was whole and very well. And sithence that tyme I haue seen that many haue brought it from the newe Spaine, and thei doe use it for these remedies.

For them that doeth not pisse liberally, and for the paines of the Raines, and of the Stone, and for theim that doeth pisse with paine, and for theim that dooeth pisse little. And now the chyng hath exceden for sybilations, for that the wa-
ter thereof doeth cure and heale them, and also of the Lun-
ges and the Liver, and this hath been founde within these
seue yeres, and thei doe finde in it notable profit. The wa-
ter is made in this forme.

For the chyng
it doeth pro-
fite.

Theye take the woodde, and doe make it in small pee-
ces verie thinne, and small as it is possible, and thei putte
theim into cleare water of the Fountaine, whiche is verie
good and cleare, and thei leaye it so vntill the water bee so-
kened into it: and in puttynge the woodde into the Water,
within halfe an hower the water doeth beginne to chaunge
it self into a blewe couller verie cleare, and the longer that
it lieth in the water, so muche the Bleuer it tourneth, al-
though that the woodde bee of a white couller. Of this wa-
ter thei doo drinke continually, and therewith thei use to
water their wine, and it doeth marueilous and manysell es-
fектes, without any alteration, so that it is needefull but
quely good governement and regimement. The water hath
no more sauour then althoough that therer were nothyng
caste into it, for that the woodde doeth chaunge nothyng.
His complexion is hotte and drye in the first degree.

How the
water is
made.

¶ Of the Peper of the Indias.



Will not let to speake of the Peper that thei
dooe bryng from the Indias; that not onely
it serueth for Medicine, but it is mosse excel-
lente, the whiche is knowen in all Spaine,
for there is no Gardeine, nor Dzcharde, but
that

Of the peper.

The firste part of the thynges that

The description of the Plante

that it hath plentie therof in it, for the fairenesse of the
leuite that it byngeth forthe.

It is a greate Plante, in so muche that I haue seen in
this citie some that was equall with some Trees. It doeth
caste the leaues Greene, after the fashion of Basill of the
biggest sorte. And it casteth out certaine white floweres, of
the whiche commeth out the fruite, the whiche is in di-
uerse formes: some Peper bee long, other rounde, others
of the makynge of Hellions, others of Cherries, but all bee
at the beginnyng when thei bee not ripe verie Greene,
and beyng ripe verie redde, and with a gracious and good
coullour.

The vse of it

They are vsed in all maner of meates and Potages, for
that it hath a better taste then the common Peper hath.
Made in peeces, and caste into the brothe it is an excellent
sauce, they doe use it in all that whiche the aromatike spice
is vsed, whiche is brought from Maluco, and Calicut. It
doeth differ from that of the Cate Indias, for that costeth
many Ducattes: the other doeth coste no more but to sowe
it, for that in one plante you haue spice for one whole yere,
with lesse hurte and more profit.

The vertues that it hath.

It dooeth comforthe muche, it dooeth dissolve windes, it
is good for the breaste, and for them that bee colde of com-
plexion: it dooeth heale and comforthe, strengthenyng the
principall members. It is hotte and drye, well nere in the
fowreth degree.

Note.

They doe byng from diuers partes of our Indias ma-
ny pourgative Medicines, that hath been founde and dis-
covered with the tyme, the whiche their warkes and effec-
tes are greater: of the whiche I will give here a shorte rela-
tion, that it maie bee a foresight, for to treate of the Roote
of Mechoacan, whiche was our principall intente now to
writte of.

¶ Of the Cannafistola.

There



Here doeth come from the Landes of Santo Domingo, and from Sant Ibon de Puerto Rico greate quanticie of Canafistola, and it is so muche that not all Spaine is prouid of it, but all Europe, and well here all the worlde; for that from Leuane, from whence it was accustomable brought, nowthere goeth therer more Shippes laden with it, then commeth Iron from Bilkeye. That whiche commeth from our Indias, is muche better in comparisyon then that whiche is brought from the Calle India to Venis, and that whiche the Galleons doeth carry from thence to Genoua, and fro Genoua to Spaine, for when the Merchantes brought it herer, it could not bee good, for that it was very small, and also it was not ripe, and with so long cyne it came so corrupted, that it did poyson litle.

This of ours that be bring from Santo Domingo, and Sainct Ibon is ripe, greate, full, weightie, honeste, and freshe. In so muche that many tymes it commeth in selle vases after it is gathered, and being freshe, it is of so gracie and good taste, and not of that horrible smell, as that of Leuane was, and so it doeth his wooke farre better, and with more facilitie.

This Canafistola, and the wooke therof is of greate securite, it purgeth gently, without any alteration. And doeth also principally Choller, and after Fleume, and that as is in the waines and the Gutes: It doeth temper theim muche that taketh it, also it purgeth the bloodde, it doeth many good wooikes in all kinde of deseases, in especially in the paines of the Raines, and of vrine, beynge take two howeres before supper. And in reumes it doeth greate profit, being taken two howeres after Supper, and easly it doeth cure the euilles of the breast, that whiche hath been of long continuance, and greeves of the side, beynge taken with sirupes for the breaste, & beynge applied outwardly w the Oile of swete Almonds; it taketh awaie the greevous deseases

Canafistola.

The description of it.

The vertue of the Canafistola.

The first part of the thynge stys.

descases of the Lungen, and greeves of the Raines. It is
good in hote Feuers, and usyng it continually before supper
or Dinner, it staieth the ingendryng of the stone, it rai-
keth away the dyeth; it is moiste in the firsde degree, it de-
clineth to heate, althoug h it bee litle, it is dissoluyatue, it
clarifeth the bload, and heaketh the sharpenesse thereof,
and of the red coler, thei haue ben in the Indias since it is
discouered some thereof so weightie, that one codde waieh
fisshyllinges, beeyng taken out by the Seue, and fower
ounces in weighte the whole cane.

¶ Of the purgative Nuttes.



The beginnyng that thei did discouer the Indias, thei brought from Sancta Domingo, certaine Nuttes beyng thre cornered, with the whiche the Indians did purge them selues withall, and it was unto them a familiar purgation. And afterwardes the Spaniardes, for necessarie did purge the selues with them, with hazarde enough of some of them, for with the use thereof, many thought to lose their liues, for that it is a strong purge, and although that he doeth make a greate exesse of stooles, it doeth also mouke vomite very strongly, and with muche violence, with greate faintnesse and beaunesse, afterwarde some did rectifie theim by costyng of theim. And then thei bee not so violent, nor so strong, nor doeth his wooze with so muche cause of faintnesse. Thei doe purge Fleume very strongly, and after Coler. It is an excellente Medicine for the Collike, it doeth dissolue windes, putt in a glister it doeth evacuate reasonably.

*This maner and coulour is as our Nuttes bee, with a thinne rinde, of the coulour of a cleare Baye, thei are thre cornered, the carnell within is white, and swerte, so muche that for his sweetnesse, there bee many that hath ben moc-
ked.*

*The quanti-
tie that is
givene of it.*

*Of the pur-
gative Nuttes.*

*What whiche
these Nutes
do purgue.*

*The descrip-
tion of the
Nutes.*

ked with it. The Phisitions boþer þe call them commonly Ben, of whiche there are twoo sortes, one theſe call Greate, and the oþer Litle. The greate Ben bee þeſe purgatiue Dutes, the little Ben bee as greate as our Peason, of the whiche in Italie thei make that oile of swete ſinell, whiche thei call oile of Ben, with the whiche thei do annoynþ their Heare, and Beardes for dilateneſſe. His complexion is hotte in the beginning of the third degree, and drye in the ſeconde. His weighte is of halle a þragme vnto one, þer ſpi must bee costed.

Of the Purgative Pinions?

The descrip-
tion of the

How they
peruse.

How they be taken.

The first parte of the bynges that

them be kept as one beyng purged. They be genen in large infirmitie, and where there be grosse humors, they be hot in the thidre degree, and brye in the seconde with some satenes, whiche doth take awaie sumwhat of the diuines.

Of the purgative Beanes.

Beanes like
to ours.

 Rom. Cartagena, and nombre de Dios, they doe byng certaine Beanes like to the fashon of ours, saupng that they be sumwhat lesse, and of the colour and makynge of oures, they haue in the middest of the Beane that doth devide the two halues, one little thinge skinne, like to the skinne of an dynion.

How they be
taken.

They doe take them from their shale, and from the inner chynne skinne, and doe cose them and make them pouder, and doe take them with Wine, and made Pouder and mingled with Sugare, taking one sponefull of the pouder, and vpon that a little draught of Wine, they doe purge without malacion Colle and Fleame, and gresse, and humors. And amongst the Indias they are of greate estimation, for the easines that they haue in the takynge of them. Many Spaniars doe purge with them with much securite, and it is a pedyne more easie and gentle then that aforesaid.

Historie.

I haue seuen monys that haue come from those partes, purge them therewith, and succede to them verry well, and purge with out greise.

Note.

And they must be aduised that there myle be taken from the chylde little skinne that is in the middest of the halues of the Beanes. For if they take it, the strengthe of it is so muche greate and bolement of Comites and foles, that they put in greate halarde hym that shall take it. And also they muste haue care to tolle them, for that is doth weare them, and delay muche of the sharpnes and ferstnes, the

whiche muste bee generall in this Medicine, and in all the reste. For that to tolle them is the true preparation of them, after the takyng of any of the aforesaid Medicines, hee muste keepe nothyng, it is needefull that hee keepe greate watche beyng purged, in all that whiche is to be soyn in a man purged maye be conuenient.

The Beanes be geuen prepared in Feuers beyng large and impotunate, and in diseases of mixte humors, beynge grosse and in the paines of the Joyntes, and it is a vnuer-
sall Purgation, they be hot in the seconde degré, and drye in the first, there be geuen of them from fower to sixe, tolled more or lesse, as the obedience and sufferaunce of the bellie
is of hym that shall take them,

*His works
and effectes.*

Of the Milke Pinipinichi:



In all the coaste of the firme land Gf the Pin-
che do take out a certain kind of
Milke, of little Trees, like to A-
ples, whiche the Indians do
call Pinipinichi, of the which cut-
ting one boogh there commeth
so the whereas it is cutte, a cer-
taine kinde of Milke sunwhac-
thiche and clammy, and takyng
three or fower dropes thereof, it doth purge valiauntly
by the stroole principally Colericke Humors, and Serpine
water, and it doth woorke with much behemence and redily.

It muste be taken in Wyne, or drie in a powder in litle
quancitie, for that his woorke is of moste strength, it hath
one thyng that in eatyng, or drinkeynge of Broth or wine or
other thyng forzwhiche it worketh no longer, & he that doth
take it hath neede of good watche and good order, it is hot
and drye in the thirde degree.

*How it is
taken.*

All these Medicines which we haue spoken of, be violent
and

1. *The first part of the thynges they*

and of greate force, and they haue not been muche vse d sick: hence the *Mechoacan* hath come, for that in it there is som a woorke more suer, and with this not onely in vs, but in all the Indians, they haue runne to it, as vnto a Pource most excellent, of the whiche we will treate now.

Of the Mechoacan.

Note.
Mechoacan.
*His riches
and increase*



He *Mechoacan* is a Rooke that it may be aboue xxx. yeres that it was discouered, in the Province of the newe Spaine, in the Indias, of the Occian Seas, it is brought from a countrie that is beyonde the greate Citie of Mexico, more then xxii leages, that is called *Mechoacan*, the whiche

By Fernando Cortes did conquer, in the yere of 1524. it is a countrie of muche Riches, of Gold and thiesly of Silver, and it is understoode that in all that countrie is Silver. For moxe then 200. Leagues, here those Mynes be celebratyd and of so muche riches, that they be called the *Cacaxcas*, every day they goe discoueryng in the Lande verie riche Mynes of Silver, and some of Golde, it is a countrie of good and holosome ayres, and doth bring forth healthfull Herbes so to heale many disteales, in so muche that at the tyme the Indians had the goverment of it, the inhabiteres there rounde aboute that Province, came therer to heale their diseases & infirmities. For the say causes, it is a countrie verie fruitfull, and of great abundance of bread, wylde soule, and frutes. It hath many Fountaines, and some of sweete waters, whiche hath muche abundance of Fishe, the Indians of that countrie be of a taller growthe, and of better faces then the Borderers are, and of moxe healthe.

*Situation of
Mechoacan*

The principall place of that province the Indians doe call

call in their language *Chincivila*, and the Spaniardes doe call it as thei call that realme *Mechoacan*, and it is a great toun of Indians, situated nere to a lake, which is of swete water, and of verie muche fishe, the same Lake is like the fasshion of making of an horse shewe, & in the middest thereof standeth the Towne, the whiche at this daye hath greate trade of buyng and sellyng, for the great mynes of plate that is in all that countrie.

As soone as that Province was gotten of the Indians, there went therer certaine Friers, of Dainte Frances order, and as in a Countrie so distaunte from their naturall soyle, some of them fell sicke, amongst whom the Warden, who was the chief Frier of the house fell sicke, with whom (*Caconcin Casque*) an Indian lord, a man of greate power in that countrie, had very greate frendship, who was Lord of all that countrie, the farther Warden had a long sickness and put to muche danger of life, the *Casque* as he sawe his desease procede forward, he saied that he would bryng hym an Indian of his, whiche was a Phisition, with whom he did cure hym self, and it might bee, that he would giue hym remeedy of his desease. The whiche bryng heard of the Frier, and seyng the little helpe that he had there, and the want of a Phisition, and other thynges of benefite, he thanked hym, and saied unto hym, that he should bryng hym unto hym: who bryng come, and seyng his desease, he saied to the *Cacique*, that if he tooke a pouder, that he would giue hym of a roote, that it would heale hym. The whiche bryng knownen to the Frier, with the desire that he had of healthe, he did accepte his offer, and tooke the pouder that the Indian Phisition gaue hym, the nexte daie, in a little waine, with the whiche he did pourge so muche, and without paines, that the same daie he was muche lightned, and muche more from that time forward, in suche sorte that he healed of his infirmitie. The rest of the Friers whiche were sicke, and some Spaniardes also that were sicke, did fol-

Hystorie.

lowe:

The firste part of the thynges that

lowe the fater Marbeins cure, and tooke of the self same
pouder once or twice, and as ofte as thei had neede of, so to
heale them. The use of the whiche went so well with them,
that all thei healed the Friers did sende relation of this, to
the Father Provinciall to Mexico where he was: who did
communicate with those of the countrie, giuing to them
of the roote, and confortyng them that thei shold take it,
because of the good relatiō, that he had from thole Friers
of Mechoacan. The whiche beyng vysed of many, and seyng
the marueilous woorkes that it did, the fame of it was ex-
tended all aboue, that in shorte tyme, all the countrie was
full of his good woorkes and effectes, banishyng the use of
Ruibarbe of Barbare, and takynge his name, namynge it

*Ruibarbe of
the Indias.*

Ruibarbo of the Indias, and so allmen dooth commonly
call it. And also it is called *Mechoacā*, for that it is brought
from thence, and gathered in the Province called *Mecho-
acan*. And not onely in *Mexico*, and in that Countrie thei
doe take it as the moste excellent purgacion, & leſt al other:
but also in *Peru*, and in al other partes of the Indias, thei
use no other thyng, neither thei poure with any other
poure, and thei take it with so muche trusse and easenesse,
that when thei take it, thei thinke to haue certaintly their
healthe, and so thei doe carry it from the newe Spaine, as
Merchandise of very greate pice.

Historie.

It maie bee thirtie and fower yeres past, when I sawe
it here the firste tyme. When one *Pasqual Catano a Geno-
ues*, came from the newe Spaine, he fell sick at his com-
myng, and as I did cure hym at the tyme that I would
poure hym, he saied come that he brought a Rubarbe
from the newe Spaine, that was a verie excellente Medi-
cine, with the whiche all thei of Mexico did poure them
selues, and that it was called *Ruibarbe of Mechoacan*, and
he had been poured many tymes therewith, and that it
had succeeded very well with hym, and if he shold take any
poure, he would take that, of the whiche he had experice.

I did cause hym vterly to forlake the use of suche like new Medicines, of the whiche there was nothyng written nor knownen. And did perswade with hym to pourge with the Medicines that wee had here, of the whiche there was so greate experiance and knowledge, and written auchours. And he did graunte to my woordes, and pourg. d hym self with a pourgation that I gaue hym, euen as it was conueniente for his desease, with the whiche although that there did followe hym notable lighenesse, and profite, yet he was not cleare of the desease in suche sorte, that it was necessarie to pourge hym an other tyme, and when we came to the seconde pourgation, he would take none other but his owne Ruiabarbe of *Mechoacan*, with the whiche he did purge so well, that he remained whole, and with no desease, and although that the effecte did like me well, I did not remaine satisfied, vntill many other that came at the same tyme, and fell sicke, did pourge with the said *Mechoacan*, and it went very well with them, because thei were accustomed to pourge therewith in the newe Spaine, and seeing his good woorkes and so many, I beganne to see it, and to pourge many therwith, giuyng credite to his good effectes.

And so with these that I did make experiance of here, as with the relation, and greate credite of them, that came out of the newe Spaine: in so muche that the use thereof hath spreade abrode, that it is a common thynge in all the wold, and thei doe pourge therewith not onely in the newe Spaine, and the Provinces of the Peru, but in our Spaine, all Icalie, Almaine, and Flaunders. I haue sent relation thereof, well nere to all Europe, as well in Latin as in our tonge.

The use thereof is so muche, that thei bryng it for cheif Merchaundise, in great quanitie, and it is solde for great sommes of money: It is so muche that a seller of Drugges tolde me, besides that he had solde for the citie, he had solde

*The use in al
partes of the
Mechoacan.*

*The greate
quanitie of
Mechoa-
can that is
used.*

The first parte of the thynges that

worthe of the Citie in the laste yere , moze then tenne kin-
tales of it , whiche is a thousande pounde weight , so that
now thei aske for Ruisbarbe of the Indias , for that it is so
familiar , that there is no Housebande man that doeth not
use it , as a moste sure Medicin , and of greate effectes , be-
cause for that kinde of Pourgation , there is no neede of a
Physition , whiche is that , as unto all menne geueth moste
content , and a chyng determined , and approued for good .

I haue talked with many of them that hath come from
the newe Spaine , and in especially with theim that hath
been in *Mechoacan* , of the fashon of the plante that doeth
carry this Roote , and what forme and figure it hath , the
whiche thei dooe byng from the Countrie , within 40. lea-
ges of beyonde *Mechoacan* , frō a countrie whiche is called
Colima , and thei haue so little care , seyng that thei dooe
bare their principall intente , unto their interes and gain ,
that thei knowe no more thereof , but that the Indians in
Mechoacan doeth sell it theim , the rootes beyng drye and
cleane , as hether thei doe byng them , and the *Spaniardes*
doe buye them , as a kinde of Merchandise , thei sende them
to Spaine .

And surely of this we are worthe of greate reprehension ,
and seyng that there is in the newe Spaine , so many
Herbes , and Plantes , and other thynges Medicinable , of
so muche importaunce , that there is not any that wriceth
of theim , nor it is vnderstoode , what vertues and formes
thei haue , for to accope them with ours , that if thei had a
desire to to searche out , and experimēt so many kiude of
Medicines , as the Indians doeth sell in their Market pla-
ces and Faires , it would bee a chyng of greate profitte and
utiltie : to see and to knowe their properties , and to expe-
rimēt the bariable and greate effectes , the whiche the Indians
doe publishe , and maniske with greate proesse ,
that emongest theim selues , thei haue of theim : and thei of
our part , without any consideration do refuse it , and lute

they bring from the *VWest Indias.*

Fol. 28.

as doeth knowe their effectes, thei will not giue vs relation, nor knowledge what thei are, nor write the efficacie and maner of them.

And goyng to seache after the Place of the Roote *Mechoacan*, a passenger that was come from that Province, did aduertise me that a *Frances Frier*, that was come from that countrie, had brought it in the ship where he came, the proper Hearbe greene of *Mechoacan*, in a greate barrell, and with muche care: and he brought it fro beyonde *Mechoacan*, and that he had it in the Frierie of *S. Frances* of this Citie, and hearyng thereof I did receiue greate contentment, and so I went forthewith to the Frierie, and at the doore of *Infermerie*, or house for the sickle people of this Frierie, there was a thyng like to halfe a pipe, in the whiche there was an herbe very greene, whiche thei saied was the *Mechoacan*, that the Frier had brought fro the newe Spaine, not with little labour. It is an herbe that goeth creeping up by certaine little Canes, it hath a sadde greene coulour, he carrieth certaine leaues, that the greatnessse of them mae bee of the greatnessse of a good porrenge dish, that is in compasse rounde, with a little point, the leasse hath his little *Senewes*, he is small, well nere without moisture, the stalke is of the coulour of a cleare Taunie. Thei saie that he doeth caste certaine clusters, with little Grapes, of the greatnessse of a *Coriander* seede whiche is his fruite, and doeth ware ripe by the Hone of September: he doeth caste out many bowes, the whiche doeth stretche a long vpō the yearch, and if you doe put any thyng nere to it, it goeth creeping upon it, the roote of the *Mechoacan* is vsualer, and without bightyng, or any sharpenesse of taste, that whiche wee doe see at this present of our *Mechoacan*: is a roote, that thei bryng from the new Spaine, from the Province of *Mechoacan*, made in great and little peeces, of them cutte in peeces, of them broken with their handes. It is a white root, somewhat stronge,

*Historie of
the Plant of
Mechoacan.*

*The descrip-
tion of the
Mechoacā.*

*How the
rootes is.*

G.ij. and

The first parte of the thynges thnt

and mightie, it appeareth that the peeces bee of a greate
roote, without any harte.

The condicions, or elections that he muste haue, for to
be good and perfect is: that he be freshe, the whiche it maie
bee knownen in that he be not wozme eaten, nor blacke, and
that he bee somewhat white, and the very white is not so
good: and if so bee somewhat russet, so that it bee the bitter-
moste parte of the roote, for that the inner parte is some-
what white. In the tastynge or Chewyng of it, it is without
sauour, or any maner of biting taste.

*The electiōs
of the Me-
choacan.*

*That is be
freshe.*

*His comple-
xion.*

It dooeth impoore to make his woorke the better, that
it be freshe, for that the fresher it is, the better it is, and the
greater the peeces are, the better thei dooe conserue. And
it is true, that whiche is brought in powder, is not so good
for that it doeth putrifie, and lose muche of his vertue, and
operation. As also wee doe see, if we doe make pouder, and
keepe it, it dooeth not make so good woorke, as when the
roote is grounde, and then forþwith taken: the roote be-
yng olde doeth tourne blacke, and it will bee wozme eaten
with holes, and doeth become verie light: It doeth keepe
well rouled in Dere clothe. It is gathered in the Moneth
of October, it neither loseth his leaffe.

His complexion is hotte in the first degree, and drye in
the seconde, for that it hath subtil partes, with some hyn-
ding, the whiche it doeth leue, that his woorke beynge made
he doeth leaue the interiour members strengthened, with-
out debilitatiue and weakenesse, that the other purgatiue
Medicines doeth leaue them in, rather thole that do purge
them selues therewith, doeth remaine after thei bee pour-
ged, more strong and hard, then before thei were pourged,
it hath no neede of rectification, for that wee doe not see in
this roote any notable hurte, onely the wine is vnto it a
corroboratiōn for his woorke, for beynge taken with wine,
it maketh a better woorke, then with any other licour, for
that it doeth not cause vomitte, and it wortketh the better.

It

It is geuen at all Tymes and in all Ages, it dothe his
woozke without molestation, and without the accidentes
that the other Medicines soluacive bee vled to doe. It is a
Medicine easie to bee taken, for that it hath no euill taste.
Onely it hath the sauour of that with the whiche it is ta-
ken: for that it is of it selfe without sauour, and so it is ea-
sie for Childdren, for that they may take it without feelyng
what it is, it is so likewise for the parsones that can not
take Medicines, for it hath nether smell nor taste. I haue
poured therewith manye Childdren, and manye very olde
persones, and haue geuen it to men of moxe then 80, yeres
of age, and makes in them verie suer and good worke, with
no maner of alteration nor chaunge of body, and without
beyng debilitated or wakened.

*Easie to take
and easie to
worke.*

*It is given to
children and
to olde peo-
ple.*

This Roote doth auoide out cholerike humors, grosse,
mixt, and flematicke Humors, of what kinde soeuer they
be, and humoris putrifid and rotten, and of boch colours, it
doth enauake the Ceterie Water, of them that haue the
Drospie, with mucche easines. The princiiall effect is to
the Liver, makynge it cleare, and comforcyng it, and the
Memberis neere adioynynge to it, as the Stomacke, and the
inner partes. It doth cure all Oprilations of the same par-
tes, and all diseases caused of them: As the Drospie, the
Jaundies, and ioyndly with his good woozke it do eth re-
stitle the euill complexion of the Liver, it dooeth dissolue
windinesse, and with easines it dooeth expell theim, and
doeth open all the hardnesse of the Liver, and of the Lun-
ges, and of the Stomacke. It taketh away old grieses of the
head, and doeth mundifie the braine and the Senewes, and
doeth emptie out the humoris that be in the head, or partes
thereof. In the disease called the Lamparones, whiche is
the Ringes Cuill it maketh a good woozke: in old grieses
of the head called the Pegrum, and the Fallynge sicknesse,
and in all Distillations, or olde runninges, in paines of the
Joyntes, in particular and uniuersall, as in the Goute Ar-

*The workes
and effectes
be meruei-
lous of this
roote.*

The first part of the thynges that

In grieses of Women. thetica, in paines of the stomacke, emptyng the cause, and consumyng windines. And in paines of the Urine & Bladder: in paines of the stome and Colicke, of what kynde soever it be, it maketh a merueilous woyke. It cureth the paines of Women, and especially the Mother, by emptyng and takyng awaie of the cause, as these causes whiche come of cold humors & windines, and in the grieses of the brest, as of an olde cough, and shortnes of breath, usynge this roote oftencrymes it taketh it awaie, and healeth, also in grieses of the Raynes caused of grosse Humors, it doth emptye and expell them.

In grieses of the Poxe. In grieses of the Poxe it doth a greate woorke. And it seemeth that for these grieses our Lo:de did ordain it, emptyng the humors of them, whiche for the moste parte are cold, and especially when they be waren olde of long tyme, it doth pourge them, and doth expell them without any paines, by multiplying the takyng thereof as many tymes as is necessary. For that in these infirmitieis that be olde, and of long continuallitie, one euacuation is not sufficient, but it is necessarie to haue many euacuations, the whiche may be doen without daunger with this Roote, and it is not to bee marueiled at, that with one euacuation therewith doth not follow the health that is wished for. But that many tymes it is needefull to haue many for to roote by and expell all in all the euill, and nougheie humors, that is the cause of the said disease.

In Agomes. This roote doth marueilously emptye out the cause of y large Feuers, and impotunate: and all Feuers compouned, and chiefly in the olde Feuers, as Tertians, Quacitans, flematich, and in suchie diseases as commonly come of opilations, usynge thereof at the tyme that is needefull.

Note. For that in the like large and impotunate diseases, the Phisition muste not bee content with one euacuation, but with many, digestyng by little and little, and auoydyng out by little and little, Sayng that the auoydyng out is doen with

with such assurance with this Medicine so blessed.

He that hath neede of it must haue a good harte, and with
errest that it will profite hym muche, the whiche he herunche
we haue seen, in so many, that with full title all credite may
be giuen to his good workes. We doe see with how muche
easines and without any accidents, it doth the effectes, that
we haue spoken of, and it is looked for, that every daie will
be discouered greater matters, that maie be added to this.

Nate.

The Rule and order that must be kept in the administration
and in geuyng of these Pouders, made of the roote of
Mechoacan, was taken of the Indian Phisition that wee
haue spoken of, and since it hath beene vseide in diuers and
sundrie fashions.

The order
that ought
to be kept in
takin of it.

The feste thyng that it doeth require for hym that shall
take this Powder is, that hee doe prepare hym selfe with
good diet, and good order. Keepping hym selfe from all thin-
ges that may offend health, and to vse of that meate which
is most conuenient for hym, and to dispose the Humor that
principally he doth pretende to auoyde out, and with some
Syrroppe, that may haue the same respect that the humor
may be disposed of, and the way prepared where he may go
out, and for this it is good that hee take the counsell of a
Phisition, he shall vse of Glisters if the Belly be not obedi-
ent at the least the daie before he shall take it, if by chaunce
he shall neede of lettynge bloud he shall do it with the iudg-
ement and opinion of a Phisition. The boode so prepared
and ready to be pourged, he shall take this roote chosen as
we haue saide, and it must be grounde, making Powder of
it, of an indifferencie finenesse, and wate of it the quantitie
that must bee taken: as we shall speake of, and put it into
white Wine, whiche is Sacke, as muche quantitie as is
needful for to drinke, and it must be taken in the morning,
the wine is the best licour that it can be taken withall, and
so it is vseid generally in the Indias, for the Wine as wee
haue saide, doth corroburate and geuech strenght to these
Pouders,

It is conve-
nient that
there be a
preparatiue
for him that
shall take it.

How these
pouders shall
be taken.

The first parte of the thynges that

Otherwaies
to gine it.

There is
made of
them Pils

In Wafer
bread.

Note.

When they
shall be givē.

What ha-
mors the
Mechoacan
dorh auoyde
our.

Pouders , and because there bee some that can drinke no
wine, in such case they may geue it in sodden water , wher-
in Synamon hath been sodden , or with Anis or Fenell
seede, and if the pure wine doe offend them, it maye be wat-
tered with amye maner of Water , but the quanticie of the
Wine that shall be taken, is so little that it can not offend,
nor molest any person, it may bee watered with Endise, or
with Langdeble water , and because this medicine is not
geuen in Harpe Agewes, but in large and temperate disea-
ses, it doth suffer the Wine better then any other licour.

Also they doe geue these Pouders with Conseru of
Violettes, and with a Syrope of Violettes, and it is good
practise, for with his colde and moisture , it doeth correcte
the little heate, and drought that the paciente hath , and let
them drinke vpon it Wine watered, or some water as a-
foresaide.

There is made of this Powder Pilles formed with a
lectury of Rosles, and surely they make a very good wōke
and pourge well.

Also they doe put it in Paste of Wafer Bread , or in
Patchpaines, and as they haue no euill sanguine, so they doe
not feele them , it serueth muche for Children and for them
that can not take the like thinges.

The Pilles that muste be made of this Powder muste be
very little : sumwhat greater then Coriander seede , that
they may dissolve the rather, & not heate, and so they wōke
more quickly and better.

They may be geuen in the morngynge and at night , these
Pouders bee geuen with moste prosperous successe, being
put to a Syrope of Rosles of nine infusions, minglyng the
quanticie that therof shall be taken in two Dunces of Sy-
rope , and surely this mixture doeth make a merueilous
woork, for that it doth stregthen, and doth inforce muche
the worke of the Pouders.

It doth auoyde Colerike, grosse and slematike humors,
and

and permixte, and the fearenes of the bloud, and so it is a greate Medicine, and of maruellous worke, it doth auoyd out most strongly the Cetrine water of them that haue the Dropsie, frequentyng it many times, giuing betwene one pourge and an other, that whithe maye corroborate and make strong the Liner. in Biache it is taken many tymes, and maketh good worke.

This Medicine or pourge must be taken in the morning early, and after it is taken, thy may sleepe halfe an hower vpon it, before it doth pouerge. For that the sleape doth staye the Vomite, and the naturall heate shall make a better worke in the Medicine.

He that shall take these Pouders, if he do feare it, or any other Medicine pourgative, and if he feare Vomit he may make one remedy, of the whiche I haue large experiance, and is when he hath taken this pourge or any other, lette hym take the Volke of an Egge rostid hot, broken between his Fingers, and put into a course Linen Clothe, and so rounde let hym put it into the Throate Pittie, and let hym holde it there vntill that he doe beginne to pouerge, for that surely, it will staye the Vomiting and also the Fumes, that doth rise of the pourge, and it is no small contente. After that he hath sumwhat slept, if he can at the tym that it beginneth to woanke, let hym not sleepe nor eate, nor drinke any thyng, and be in place where the ayre doth not offend hym, nor with muche company, for that all the intente shall be for to pouerge, waing all thynges that may let the auoyding out. And he shall be aduertised that one of the greate excellencies that this pourge hath is, that it is in the handes of the sicke person to auoyde out, the quantite of Humor that he will, the whiche is a thyng that they of old tyme did consider muche of. And waing whiche was surest the pourge or the lettryng of bloud, they do not alege any other cause more principlall, but that the lettryng of bloud is more sure. Forasmuche as in the lettryng of bloud we may take

When it
should be ta-
ken.

Note.

The first parte of the thynges that

*out the quancty of blod that we lust, and not in the pourge,
for once being taken, it is not in the haunes of the Phisition
on, nor the sick person that can let it to doe his woike, the
whiche is not in this our pourge of the roote of Macho-
cas. Sēyng that with takyng of a little Brothe, or eatyng
any maner of chyn, doyng his worike it sealeth, and wo-
rketh no more, and so it can not excuse nor hurt the pacient.*

Note.

*Surely it is to be holden in myche, that there is founde
a kynd of pourge with so myche assuraunce, and so mighet-
ly doth his worike, and it is at the will of hym that doeth
take it. After it hath doen what he seemeth good, and suffi-
cient, so that with a little Brothe whiche he eateth, it shall
worike and pourge no more.*

*After that
he hath pour-
ged.*

*After that the sick person or Phisition hath seen that
it hath made and ende of his working, and hath pourged
that which is conuenient, then they must geue hym to eate,
takyng at the beginnyng of his Dinner a Dishefull of
Brothe, and after a little while let hym eate of a Hen, and
in the rest let hym governe hymselfe as one that is pour-
ged, as well in his drinke as in his meate, as in the keeping
that he shall haue of his person, For that daie that he doeth
take it, let him take heed that he sleepe not in the day tyme,
nor drinke till Supper, the whiche Supper shall bee light,
and some good meates.*

*That he
must doe the
next daie.*

*The nexte daye let hym take a washynge Medicine, and
some Conserua, and from that tyme forwarde let hym kepe
good order and good governement, in all that is conueni-
ent for him.*

*And if that with once takyng of these powders, the sick
man doeth not heale, or doeth not auoyde from hym that
whiche is needfull for to heale, he maye take it againe,
as many tymes as the Phisition shall see conuenient, where
as he shall haue care after that the sick man is pourged, to
comforte and to alter the principall members.*

Note.

*And in this I can gue no preesse opinion, for that there
be*

be diners and variable diseases, and it is needfull for them
diuers remedies, and my intence is no more then to write
the vse of the Roote of *Mechoacan*, and as a thyng of so
greate importaunce, and of a poure and remedy so excel-
lent, as nature hath giuen vnto vs.

And if the tyme hath taken from vs the true *Myrr*, and
the true *Ballomo*, and oþer Medicines that they of olde
tyme had. Of the whiche in our tyme there is no memorie
of them, and with the tyme they are loste, hee hymselfe in
place of them hath discouered and giuen so manye and so
sundry thinges as wee haue spoken of, as our Occidentall
Indias do send vs. In especially the *Mechoacan*, a poure
most excellent and gentle, that it doth his wo:ke with such
assurance, beyng white in colour, pleasaunt in sauour, and
sinnell easie to take, without any lothsonnes in woorkyng,
and without that horriblenes, that other pourges haue, and
without those accidentes and falenes that cometh at the
tyme, that they be taken, & without that disquietnes which
it makeþ when it wo:kerþ.

*A good di-
gerßion.*

This Roote hath ouer and aboue that, whiche is saied,
other properties, and hidden wo:kes, that we do not reach
vnto, whiche with this tyme and vse of them shalbe knowne
and discouered every daie.

The waight or quantite that is giuen of the Powder,
made of the Roote of *Mechoacan*, is conformably to the ob-
edience of the belly, of hym that shall take it. Some there
be that do poure with little quantite. I do know a gentle-
man of this Realme, that with the waight of halfe a Ryall,
whiche is iii. d. dooeth, poure very well, and other that
haue neede of the waight of xiiij. d. and others of the waight
of xvij. d. And in this every one ought to measure the qua-
ntite, as the belly hath the obedience, more or leſſe. Euē so
they ought to lunit the quantite conformably to the age of
the Pacient. For that the Childe hath neede of little, the
Boye of mo:re, and the strong man of muche mo:re, and the

*The quanti-
tie that is gi-
uen of it.*

H.ij. Leane

The first parte of the thynges that

Leane of lesse, and for this cause the Phisition mullke mea-
sure the quanteitie as he seemeth conueniente. Because to
the Childe he shall gene the waight of iiiij. d. and to the Boy
the waight of vi. d. and to the Manne the waight of xii. d.
whiche is commonly so taken, to the Woman it is not con-
uenient to give lesse then the waight of twelue pence, and
in this there may be had a consideracion, seyng that it is in
the hande of the Phisition to take awaie his woorke when
he doth see that it doth excede, it is better to gene a little
to much, consideryng that wch taking of a fewe sappynge
of brothe, if it doe excede, the excesse may be remedied.

This is the summe whiche I haue vnderstoode vnto this
date of the Rootes, which they doe bryng from the Province
of Mechoacan, and when I shall knowe more of it, I will
write as the tyme and the use thereof shall shewe.

Of the quicke Sulphur.

*Quicke Sul-
phur.*



When I made an end of Wryting of these
laste lynes Baruardine of Burgus Pottis-
carie, a man learned and experie in his
arts, did shewe me in his shop a peice
of quicke Sulphur bryght from vtre
Indias, a thyng most excellent as euer
I sawe, and in oure tyme the like hath
not been seen, it was bryght like Glasse, of the colour of fine
Gold, takynge a little of it, and castynge it into the fyre, it
doth caste from it a very greate smell of Brimstone like to
greene smoke, and the peice it selfe (smelling therewyns)
hath no smell.

Thei broughit it from Quito, bryngyn in the Province of
Peru, a Mine that there was founde in certaine Hilles,
nere vnto the Mynes of gold. And it is not in vain that the
Alquimistes doeth say, that the mater of the Gold, is the
Quicke Silver, and the Sulphur that is to saye, the Quick-
silver

As it is.

*It was
brought fro
Quinto.*

Note.

siluer the matter, and the Sulphur the former, and maker. And so this whiche I sawe, was like to a peice of Golde moste fine.

Thei bryng from *Nicaraga* other Sulphur, but it is Russet, like to Thes, congeled without coulour or brightenesse, whiche is founde nigh unto the Volcan of *Nicaraga*, the whiche beyng caste into the fire, it dooeth caste from it the smell of *Byntstone*, but it is a peice of yearth, that in nothyng it is like to that, of the Province of *Quito*, more then in the smell, and it hath not that coulour of Golde, nor that brightenesse as the other hath, whiche is of *Quito*.

Enall Sulphur.

The whiche beyng applied in the thynges, that is convenient for Medicine, dooeth merueilous effectes, specially beyng grounde, and dissolved with Wine, and putte in the Night to thiem, that hath their face redde inflame, that bee like to *Lepozes*, lyng it certayne Nightes, after theye have been at the stole, it taketh the rednesse awaie, and healeth it merueilouslie, of the whiche I haue greate experiance. It healeth the Skabbes, beyng dissolved with oile of *Roses*. Takynge the weight of sixe pence in an Egge, it healeth the Collike, and the Pallie. It is good for the paine of the Stone, and beyng taken, it healeth the Jaunders.

In the thynges that it profiteth.

It is hotte and drye excelluely, the whiche dooeth appeare by the frendship, that it hath with the fire, for beeynge touched with it, it dooeth inflame, and maketh a flaine. It is the princiyall matter, of that Devilishe inuention of Gun pouder, whiche hath been the cause of so many euilles, and hurtes.

His comple-
xion.

¶ Of the v-voode Aromatike.



Also the saied *Barnardino de Burgos* shewed me a wood, whiche to my seemyng, I thought to haue been the holie wood, that of saint Ihon de *Puerico*, the whiche was after this manner, and

¶.iiij. forme,

The firste part of the thynges that

forme.

*The smell of
the wood.*

Beeyng in the House of a principall Marchaunte of
thys Citie, makynge a Medicin in a Chimneye, where
they did burne of that Woodde: The Smoke that came
out of the Woodde did smell muche, and gaue a verie
sweete smell, of the whiche he did maruelle muche, and did
ask from whence thei had caste checher that good smell,
thei of the house tolde hym, that the good smell was of the
wood that thei did there burne, and it was it which did cast
that good smell: he tooke a sticke of the woodde, and from
it plucked a lyppe of the same, the whiche had no smell nor
sauour, more then other common woodde had, then he tooke
awaie a litle of the rinde, and smelled unto it, and tasted it,
and he founde a sweete smell moche excellencye in it, and a sa-
uour no moxe nor lesse then of Paces, or Nutmegges, and
muche moxe sharpe, and moxe sweete, and of a moxe plea-
saunte smell and taste, then any Sianamome that is in the
worlde, and with moxe liueliness, and sharpenesse of taste
then the Peper. I tasted it at the takyng awaie of the rinde
from the saied woodde, of the whiche he had a greate peece
of the timber, and surely there is nat any thyng of so sweete
smell and taste, of that whiche we haue, that with so muche
pleasaunce of smell, and with suche liueliness did peni-
trate me, in so muche that tastynge a litle of it, I carried
all that daie the sweete smell and sauour in my mouthe, be-
yng merueilous, as though I had carried a peece of Nut-
megge.

Historie.

Of this woodde thei saied, that a Maister of a Shippe
of his, did cutte a greate quantitie of it, that came by the
Havana, and in a Mountaine, they cut muche of it, for the
Shippes prouision, and that whiche did remaine they car-
ried it to the owners house, and doe wast it, as I haue said.
Whereby I doe consider howe manie Trees and Plantes
there be in our Indias, that hath greate vertues for Medi-
cines, that in the woodde of the Chimney they doe spende
wood,

wood of sweete odiferous smelles, the Rinde of the whiche
beyng made Pouder, there might be doen verie greate ef-
fectes with it, confortyng the harte and the stomacke, and
principall mebers, without seekyng after y spicerie of *Ma-
luka*, and the medicines of *Arabia*, and them of *Percia*. See-
yng that in the fieldes vntilled, and in the Mountaines and
Desertes, our Indias doth geue them vnto vs, the faule is
ours that wee doe not followe after it, noz sike to doe the
diligence that is conueniente, for to profite oure selues of
these marueilous effectes, the whiche I doe trusste that
the tyme being the discoverer of all thinges,
and good diligence and experiance
will shewe it vs vnto our
greate profite.

The ende of the first parte.

¶ O D be prayzed.



ANSWER

20001005

THE SECONDE PART Fol. 33.

OF THIS BOOKE IS OF THE THINGS
that are brought from our Occidentall INDIAS, whiche
doe serue for the vse of Medicine, where is treated of the
Tabaco, and of the Sassafras, and of the Carto Sancto, and of
many other Herbes and Plantes, Seedes and Licas-
res, that newly hath come from these partes, of
greate vertues and maruellous effectes.

Made by the Doctor MONARDVS, Phisition of Senill.



The second parte of the thynges that

Catholike Roiall Maiestie.



These daies paste I wrote a boke
of al thinges, whiche doeth come
from youre Occidentall Indias,
whiche doeth serue for the vse of
Medicine: and surely it hath been
taken in that estimation, that the
thynges whiche in it is treated
doeth deserue. And seeing the pro-
fite that it hath dooen, and howe
many hath been remedied, and healed with those remedies, I
did determine to procede forwardes, and to write of the thin-
ges, whiche after that was written, hath come fro those coun-
tries, of the whiche I haue vnderstoode, that no lesse vtilitie
and profite shall come then of that whiche is paste, for there
shall be seen in it newe thynges and secrete, whiche will put
admiration, neuer to this daie seen nor knownen. And seeyng
that those Medicinall thynges whiche wee doe treate of, and
the Realmes and Countries from whence thei come, bee of
your Maiestie, and he that doeth write of them, is your Maie-
sties subiecte: I doe desire your Maiestie, to receiue it in-
to your protection, and that the rewardc maie be
suche, as for the like woorke dedicated
to your Maiestie, are accustomed
to bee receiued.

Your Maiesties Subiecte.

The Doctor Monardes.

Of the Tabaco, and of his greate vertues.



His hearbe which commonly is called *Tabaco*, is an Hearbe of muche antiquicie, and knownen amongest the Indians, and in especiallye among theym of the newe Spaine, and after that those countries were gotten by our Spaniardes, being caught of the Indians, they did profite themselves of those thinges, in the woundes whiche they received in their Warres, healing themselves therewith, to the greate benefite of them.

Within this fewe yeres there hath beene brought to Spaine of it, more to adorne Gardeines with the fairenes thereof, and to geue a pleasaunt sight, rather then that it was thought it had the marueilous Medicinal vertues, whiche it hath, now we doe use of it more for his vertues, then for his fairenes, for surely they are suche which do put admiration.

It is growyng in many partes of the Indias, but ordinary in moist places, and shadow places, and it is needefull that the ground where it is sownen, bee well tilled, and that it bee a fruitfull groune in all tymes it is sownen, in the hot countries. But in the colde countries it muste bee sownen in the moneth of Marche, for that it may defende it selfe from the frost.

The proper name of it amongest the Indians is *Peciel*, for the name of *Tabaco* is geuen to it of our Spaniardes, by reason of an Ilande that is named *Tabaco*.

It is an Hearbe that doth growe and come to bee very great: many tymes to bee greater then a Lemmon tree, it doth caste out one steame from the Roote whiche groweth vp right, without declining to any parte, he doth caste out many

I.H.

How it is sownen and how it groweth.

The name of it.

The description of it.

many

The second parte of the thynges that

The flower.

many Bowes, straight that well nere they bee equall with the principall steame of the tree, his Leaf is well nere like to the Leaf of a Hydron tree, they come to be verie great, and be of colour greene, the Plant is heauie, they be in the Garden as Sidrons and Dringes are. For that all the yere they are greene, and haue leaues, and if any wyther, they be those that are lowest in the highest parte of all the Plante, there doth growe out the flower, the whiche is after the maner of white Campanilia, and in the middest of Carnation colour, it hath a good shewe when it is dye, it is like to blacke Popie seede, and in it is shut vp, the seede whiche is verie small, and of the colour of a darke Tauny.

The seede.

The roote.

His Leanes.

*His comple-
xion.*

*His vertues
in generall.*

The Roote is great, conformable to the greatness of the Plante, deuided into many partes, and it is like to wood in substance, the whiche beynge parced, it hath the barre within, like vnto the colour of Safron, and beynge tolled, it hath some bitternes with it. The Rinde commeth awaie easilly, we knowe not that the roote hath any vertue at all. Of onely the Leanes wee know the vertues, whiche wee will speake of, although that I doe beleue that the roote hath Medicinall vertues inough, the whiche the tyme shall discouer. And some will saie that it hath the vertue of Rubarbe, but I haue not experienced it as yet, they doe keepe the leanes after they be dye in the shadowe, for the effectes that we will speake of, and thei be made powder, so to vse of them in place of the Leanes, for it is not in all partes, the one and the other, is to be kept a greate tyme, without corruptyng, his complexion is hot and dye in the seconde degree, it hath vertue to heate and to dissolve, with some bindyng and comfortyng it gleweth together, and doth soder the freshe woundes, and doth heale them, the fitchy woundes and soares it doth cleanse & reduce them to a perfise health, as it shall be spoken of soverarde, and so we will speake of the vertues of these Hearbes, and of the thynges that it doeth profit, every one peticularly.

This.

This Hearbe Tabaco hath particular vertue to heale grieses of the head, and in especially cummyng of cold cau- ses, and so it cureth the headage when it cominck of a cold humor, or of a windie cause, the Leaues muste be put hot to it vppon the griefe, and multipliynge them the tyme that is needeful, vntill the griefe be taken awaie. Some there bee that doe annoynce them with the Dyle of Dringes, and it doeth a verie good woozke.

In paines of the head.

In any maner of griefe that is in the bodie or any parte therof it healpeth, beyng of a cold cause, and applied there- vnto, it taketh it awaie, not without greate admiration.

In any grief of the body.

In grieses of the brest it doth make a marueilous effect, and in especially in those that doe cast out matter and rot- tennesse at the mouth, and in them that are sherte breasted. And any other olde euilles makynge of the hearbe a sicc- thyng, and with Suger made a Sirupe, and beyng taken in litle quantitie, it doth cause to expell the Matters, and rotteness of the breast marueilously, and the smoke beyng taken at the mouthe, doth caule that the matter be put out of the breast, of them that doe seatche their breath shorte.

In grieses of the Brest.

In the griefe of the stomacke, caused of colde causes, or windie, the leaues beyng put very hot, it doth take it awaie, and dissolueth it by multipliynge of them, vntill it be taken awaie. And it is to be notoed, that the leaues are to be war- med better then any other, amongst Ashes or Emberes very hot, chrustyng the hearbes into them, and so to warme them well, and althoough they be put to with some Ashes, it maketh the woozke better, and of more strong effectes.

In the griefe of the sto- macke.

In Opilations of the stomacke, and of the inner parkes principally, this hearbe is a greate remedy: for that it doth dissolute them, and consumeth them, and this same it doth in a maner of Opilations or hardnes, that is in the belly, the cause beyng of a colde humor, or of windines.

To warme
the Leaues
amongst
Ashes.

They muste take the hearbe greene, and stampē it, and with those stamped leaues rubbe the hardnes a good while,

In opilations

*The waine
how to ap-
plie it...*

The second parte of the thynges that

and at the tyme as the Hearbe is in the Porter a stam-
pyng, lette there bee putte to it a fewe droppes of Vineger,
that his wroke may be made the better, and after the place
is rubbed where the paine is, then put vpon it one leafe or
leaues of the Tabaco beyng hotte, and so let it alone till the
nexte daye, and then doe the like againe, or in place of the
leaues put a Linen clothe wette, in the hotte Joyce. Some
there bee, that after they haue rubbed it with the stamped
leaues, they doe annoynt it with oyntments, made for the
like euilles, & vpon it thei put the leaues or the joyce of the
Tabaco. And surely with this cure they haue dissolued great
and harde opilations, and very olde swellinges in the grief
of the stone, of the Kidneis and Raines, this Hearbe dothe
greate effectes, by puttynge the leaues into Aches, or Em-
bres, hotte, that they may warme well, and then beyng put
vpon the griefe, multiplying it as often as it is needfull.
It is necessary in the Seethynges that is vse to be made
for Glisters to putte into them with the other thinges, the
Leaues of this Hearbe: for that they shall profit muche,
and likewise for Fomentations and Plaisters, that they
shall make.

*In grieves of
windes.*

In grieves of windes they make the like effect, takynge
awte the paines that doth come of the windes, applying
the Leaues after the same sort as it is fated.

*The euill of
the Mother.*

In the grefe of women, whiche is called the euill of the
Mother, puttynge one leafe of this hearbe Tabaco verie
hotte, in the maner as it is fated, it doeth manifeste pro-
fite: it muste bee put vpon the Mauell. And vnder it some
doeth vse to put first of all, thynges of good smell vpon the
Mauell, and then vpon that thei put the leafe, in that thei
doe finde moste profit, is to putte the Tacamahaca, or the
oile of liquid Amber, and Balsamo, and Carana, any thyng
of these put to the Mauell, and kept to it continually, that
it mait cleave vnto it, doeth manifeste profit in grieves of
the Mother.

*In the grieve
of the stone.*

*To put them
in Glisters.*

In one thing, the women that dwelleth in the Indias, doeth celeb̄ate this hearbe, that is in the euill breathyng at the mouthe of childdren, when thei are ouer filled with meate, and also of greate people, anointyng their heallies with lampe oile, and puttynge some of those leaues in ashes hote to their heallies, and also to their shoulders, it doeth take awaie their naughtie b̄reathyng: and it doeth make that thei goe to the stoole, puttynge it therewinto, the tymes that it is needfull, if the leaues bee assched it is the better.

For an euill breath.

In Wormes, and in all kinde of theim, it killeth them, and doeth expell theim merueilouſſe, the ſeethyng of the hearbe made a ſrupe delicately, taken in verie little quanticie, and the joyce thereof put on the nauell, it is needfull after this be doen to geue a Glitter, that may auoyde them out, and expell them out of the guttes.

For Wormes

In grieses of the Joyntes beyng of a colde caufe it maketh a marueilous wooke, the Leaues of this Tabaco beynge put hot vpon the grieſe, the like doth the Joyce put vpon a littell cloche hot. For that it doth diſſolute the humor, and taketh awaie the paines thereof, if it bee a hot caufe it doth hurte, ſauyng when the humour hath beene hot, and the ſubill is diſſolued, and the groſſe remaineth, that then it doth profit as if the caufe were colde, and it is to be vnderſtoode, that the leaues beyng put, wher as is grief of the ſaide caufe, in anape parte of the bodye, that it will profit muſche.

In euill of the Joyntes.

In ſwellynges or in colde Impotumes, it dooeth diſſolute and vndoe them, washyng them with the hote Joyce, and puttynge the beaten leaues, after they be ſtampte, or the leaues beyng whole of the ſaien Tabaco vpon it.

In colde ſwellynges.

In the ſore tooth when the grieſe is of a colde caufe, or of colde Ruines, puttynge to it a little Baull made of the leafe of the Tabaco, washing firſte the tooth with a ſmall clothe wet in the Joyce, it taketh awaie the paine, and doth ſtate it, that the putrefaction go not forwarde; in hot caufes

For the tooth ache.

The second part of the thynges that

it doth not profite, and this remedy is so common that euery one healeth.

*For Chil-
blaines.*

This Hearbe doth marueilously heale the Chilblaines, rubbing them with the stamped leaues, and after puttynge Vandes and Feete in hot water, with Salt, and keepping them warme, this is doen with greate experiance in many.

*In Venom &
venomous
woundes.*

In Venom and venomous Woundes our Tabaco hath greate experiance, whiche he hath been knownen a little tyme past, that when the wilde people of the Indias, which eate mannes fleshe dooe shooote their Arrowes, they dooe anoint them with an hearbe or Composition made of many poysones, with the whiche they doe shooote at all thinges that they would kill, and this Venom is so euill, and pernicious, that it killeth without remedie, and they that bee hurte dieth with greate paines and accidents, and with madnes, vntesse that they had founde remedie for so greate an euill. A fewe yeres past they did put to their Woundes Sublimatum, and so were remedied, and surely in those partes they haue suffered much with this vexation of poysone.

*Sublimatum
in the veno-
med wondes.*

A little whiles past, certaine wild people goyng in their Bootes to Saint Iohn Depuerto Rico, for to shooote at Indians, or Spaniardes, if that they might finde them. They came to a place and killed certaine Indians, and Spaniardes, and they did hurte manye, and as by chaunce there was no Sublimatum at that place to heale them, they did remember to put vpon the woundes the Joyce of the Tabaco, and the Leaues stamped. And God wold, that puttynge it vpon the hurtes, the grieses, madnes, and accidents, wherwith they died, was mitigated, and in such a sorte they were deliuerned of that euill, that the strength of the Venom was taken awaie, & the wondes were healed, of the whiche there was greate admiration, the whiche beyng knownen by them of the Ilande, they doe vse it in other hurtes and woundes, that they do take when they do fight with the wild people, and nowe they haue no feare of them, by reason they haue founde

founde so great a remedy, in a thing so desperate.

This Hearbe hath also vertue againstste the Hearbe cal-
led of the Croslebowe shooter, that our hunters doe vse to
kill the wild beastes withall, which hearbe is venom moste
strong, and dooeth kill with out reamedy the whiche the
kynges pleasure was to proue, he did commaunde to make
experience thereof, and they did wound a little Dogge in
the throte. And did put forthwith in the wound the hearbe
of the Croslebowe shoter, and after a little while, they put
in to the selfe same wounde that they had annoyncted with
the Croslebowe Shooters Hearbe, a good quantitie of the
Joyce of Tabaco, and the stamped leaues vpon it, and they
tied the dogge, and he escaped not without greate admira-
tion of all men that sawe hym. Of the whiche the excellent
Philistion of the Chamber of his maiestie the Doctor Bar-
nard in the margent of this booke, that saw it, by the com-
maundement of his Maiestie, saith these woordes. I did
this experieence by the commaundement of the kings Ma-
iestie. I did wound the Dogge with a knife, and after I did
put the croslebowe shooters hearbe into the wound and the
hearbe was chosen, the dogge was taken of the hearbe, and
the Tabaco and his Joyce put into the wounde, the dogge e-
scaped and remained whole.

In the venomos Carbuncles, the Tabaco beyng put in
the maner as is said doeth extinguishe the malice of the ve-
nom, and it doth that whiche al the workes of Surgery, ca-
doe vntill it be whole. The same thing it doeth in bitinges of
venomous beastes, for it doeth kill and extinguishe the ma-
lice of the venom, and healeth them.

In woundes newly hurte and cuttinges, strokes, prie-
kes, or any other maner of wounde, our Tabaco doth mar-
ueilowes effectes. For that it doth heale them and maketh
them sound, the wound muste be washed with wine, and pro-
cure to annoynct the sides of it, takyng away that whiche is
superfluous, and then to put the Joyce of this hearbe, and

*Against the
hearbe of
the Cros-
lebowe shoter.*

Historie.

*Doctor Bar-
nard.*

*In venomos
Carbuncles.*

*In bitinges
of venomous
beastes.*

*In woundes
newly hurte.*

*The maner
of healing.*

The second part of the thinges that

Note.

Upon it the stamped leaues, and beynge well bound it shall stande vntill the next daie that they shal recourne to dresse it, after the same fashion they shal keepe good order in their meate, vsing the diet necessary, and if it be needfull of anie euacuation by stoole, the cause beyng greate, let it be doen what shall bee conueniente. And with this order they will heale, without any neede of any moxe Surgearie then this hearbe. Here in this Countrie, and in this City they know not what to doe, hauing cut or burte themselues, but to run to the Tabaco, as a most redie remedie, it doth marueilous workes, without any neede of other Surgery, but this only hearbe. In restraining the fluxe of bloud of the wounds it doth most marueilous workes, for that the Joyce and the Leaues beyng stamped: is sufficient to restraine any fluxe of bloud.

In old sores.

In olde Soares it is marueilous the woorkes and the effectes that this Hearbe dooeth, for it healeth them wonderfully, making cleane and mundifying them of al that is superfluous, and of the rott ennesse, that it hath, and doeth bring uppe the fleshe, reducyng them to parfite health, the whiche is so common in this Citie that eueryman doeth know it, and I hauyng ministred it to many people as well menne as women, in greate number, and beyng greeued of tenne, and of twentie yeres thei haue healed olde rotten sores in legges, and other partes of the body, with only thys remedy to the great admiration of all men.

*The order of
the Cure.*

The order of the Cure that is to bee healed with this hearbe is this following. The olde rotten soares althongh they bee cankered, let the sick man bee pourged with the counsaill of a Physition, and let hym bloud if it be needfull, and then take this Hearbe and pounde it in a Morter, and take out the Joyce and put it into the Soare, and then after the maner of a Plaister put the stamped leaues vpon it, whiche are the Leaues that the Joyce is taken out of, and this doe once every daie eatynge good Meates, and not exceeding

ceedyng in any disorder, for otherwise it will not profit. And doyng this it will make cleane the euill fleshe beyng rotten, and superfluous, vntill it come to the whole fleshe, and is not to be marueiled if that the wounde be made verie greate. For the euill muste bee eaten vp, vntill it come to the good, and with the same cure puttynge lesse quantite of ioice it will incarnate, and reduce it to parfit health, in suche sort that it doeth all the workes of Surgey, that all the Medicines of the world may doe, without hauyng neede of any other maner of medicine.

This woode doth cure olde Soares, with so muche admiration: and not onely in men, but in herte beastes. As at this daie in all partes of the Indias, where you haue anye cattell hauyng woundes or gaules and the countrie beyng hotte and moyste ouer muche, it doe soone rotte them, and very quickly come to be cakered, and for this cause, muche greate cattel doe dye. And to remedy this, and the wormes that doe increase in the soares, thei had for remedye to put into the sores *Sublimatum*: for that in this remedie thei did finde moxe benefite then in anye other, that they had vset. And for that the *Sublimatum* had there so high a pricke, many tymes it was more worthe then the cattell that it healed. And for this cause and for hauyng founde in the *Tabaco* so muche vertue for to heale newe woundes and rotten, they did accorde and agree to gether to use the *Tabaco*, in the healing of beastes, as they had doen in the cure and remedy of menne, puttynge the *Joyce* of the *Tabaco* into the woundes, and walsyng it therewith, and puttynge upon it the stamped leaues of the *Tabaco*, after that the *Joice* is taken from it, and it is of so greate efficacie and vertue, that it killeth the wormes, and maketh cleane the soare, eating awaie the euill fleshe, and it doth engender new fleshe vntill it be whole, as in the other thinges whiche we haue spoken of, the like it doth in the gaules of the beastes of *Cariege*, the *Joice* beyng put and the beaten leaues wherof the *Joice*

*It cures
best the woul-
des that be
rotten and
cankerred.*

*Sublimatum
doth heale
the soares of
beastes that
be cankerred.*

The second part of the thynges that

commeth of the *Tabaco*, as it is saied: althoough it bee can-
kered, it doeth make them cleane, and doeth incarnate the-
and cureth and helpeth them. And so the Indians dooe car-
ry it, when thei doe iourney, for this purpose and effect, and
it doeth the like profit, that the ioyce doeth.

Historie.

I sawe a manne that had certaine old soxes in his nose,
whereby he did caste out from hym muche matter, and dai-
ly did rotte and canker inwardes, and I caused him to take
at his nose the ioice of this *Tabaco*, and so he did, and at the
seconde tyme, he did caste out from hym, moze then twen-
tie little wormes, and afterwarde a fewe moze, vntill that
he remained cleane of them, and vlyng it so certaine daies.
He did heale of the soxes, that he has in the inner part of his
nose: and if he had carried any longer, I thinke that there
had remained nothyng of his nose, but all had been eaten
awaie, as it doeth happe to many, whiche we doe see with-
out them. And beyng wryng of this, a daughter of a gen-
till manne of this Citie, had many yeres a certaine maner
of vrie skabbes, or well nere skurvie in her hedde, I had
cured her, and dooen unto her many benefites, vniuersall,
and particular: and also Maisters of Surgearie had dooen
their diligence, and all did not profit. And a gentlewoman,
whiche had the charge of her, as she heard me saye one daie,
muche good of the *Tabaco* that it did good, and was profi-
table, for so many infirmities, she sente for it, and did rubbe
hard the desease that the wenche had, and that daie she was
very euill, and was as though she had been foolishe, and the
gentlewoman did not let, in seeyng her after that soxe to
rub her harder, and then the wenche did not feele so muche
grieve, but that the vrie skabbes beganne to fall, and the
white scurfe of her hedde in suche soxe, it did make cleane
and healed her hedde, with doyng of it certaine daies, that
she healed of her scurvie desease very well, without know-
yng what she did.

Historie.

One of the merueilles of this Hearbe, and that whiche
doeth

doeth bryng moſte admiration, is, the maner how the priſtes of the Indias did hle of it, whiche thei did in this maner: when there was emongſt the Indians any maner of busynelle, of greate importance, in the whiche the chiefe gentlemen called *Cafquieres*, or any of the principall people of the Countrie, hauyng neccellie to conſulte with their Priſtes, in any busynelle of importance: then thei wente and propounded their matter to their chieſt Priſte, forthe- with in their preſence, he toke certain leaues of the Tabaco, and caſte theim into the fire, and did receiue the ſmoke of them at his manche, and at his noſe, with a Cane, and in ta- kyng of it, he fel downe, vppon the grounde, as a dedde manne, and remainyng ſo, accordyng to the quancitie of the ſmoke that he had taken, and when the hearbe had doen his woſke, he did reuive and awake, and gaue theim their aunſwertes, accordyng to the viſions, and illuſions whiche he ſaw, whiles he was rapte of the ſame maner, and he did interpretē to them, as to hym ſemed beſte, or as the Deuill had counſailed hym, giuing theim continually doubtfull aunſwertes, in ſuſh ſorte, that how ſoeuer it fel out, thei might ſaiſe that it was the ſame, whiche was declared, and the aunſwertes that thei made.

In like ſorce the reſte of the Indians for their paſtyme, doe caſte the ſmoke of the Tabaco, for to make theim ſelues drunke withall, and to ſee the viſions, and thinges that doe repreſent to them, wherin thei dooe delight: and other ty- mes thei cooke it to knowe their busynelle, and ſuccelle, be- cause conformable to that, whiche thei had ſeen, beeyng drunke therewith, even ſo thei might iudge of their bu- nyelle. And as the Deuill is a deceiver, and hath the know- ledge of the vertue of Hearbes, he did ſhewe them the ver- tue of this Hearbe, that by the meanes thereof, thei might ſee their imaginacions, and viſions, that he hath repreſen- ted to theim, and by that meanes doeth deceiver them.

To haue Hearbes that haue the like vertue, is a com-
mon

The maner
how the prie-
ſtes of the
Indias doe
Uſe this Ta-
baco.

Hearbes
whiche haue

The first seconde of the thinges that

*virtue in mon thyng, and in the booke of the Phisitions, Dioscorides
dreamyng of doeth saie, that one dragine of the roote of Solastro, beynge
taken in wine, whiche roote is very straunge, and furious,
doeth prouoke slepe greatly, and doeth make hym that ca-
keth it, to dreme of chinges variable, and doeth represent
vnto hym terrible imaginacions, and visions, and others
doeth giue delectacion, and pleasure. Of the Anis lede thei
saie, beynge eaten at the hower, when that thei shall slepe, it
doeth make a pleauance, and delectable dreme. The Ke-
dishe doeth make theim grecious, and very heauie, and so of
many other Hearbes, whiche shalbe large to speake of, the
whiche of this matter, the auncient writers doeth write of.*

*Of the ba-
gue whiche
thei yse in
the Oriental
Indias.*

*Diego Gratia de Guerria, in the booke that he writeth of
the Spicerie and Drugges of the Orientall Indias, doeth
saie, that in those partes there is an Hearbe, whiche is cal-
led *Bague*, the whiche beynge mingled with thynges of
sweete smell, thei make of it a confection of excellente smell
and taste: and when the Indians of those partes, will de-
pynne them selues of iudgement, and see visions that doeth
giue theim pleasure, then thei take a certaine quanticie of
this confection, and in takyng of it, thei remaine dopyned
of all iudgemente, and while the vertue of their Medicine
doe endure, thei doe receive muche delight, and thei doe see
thynges, whereby thei doe receive pleasure, and be glad of
it. There was a myghtie Emperour, beynge Loze of many
Realmes, saied vnto Martine Alfonso de Sosa, viceroy
that was of the Calle India, that when he would see Real-
mes, and Cities, and other thynges, of the whiche he did
receive pleasure, that he would then take the *Bague*, made
in a certaine confection, and that in dopyng of it, he did re-
ceive pleasure. The yse of this confection is very common,
and very muche ysed emongeste the Indians of those par-
tes, and thei dooe sell it in the publike Markeete, for this
effeete.*

*The Indians of our Occidentall Indias, doeth yse of
the*

the Tabaco for to take awaie the wearines, and for to take lighesomnesse of their laboure, whiche in their Daunces thei bee so muche wearied, thei remaine so wearie, that thei can scarcely stirre: and because that thei maie laboure the nexte daie, and retourne to doe that foolishe exercise, thei dooe take at the mouche and nose, the smoke of the Tabaco, and thei remaine as dedde people, and beyng so, thei bee eased in liche sorte, that when thei bee awakened of their slepe, thei remaine without wearinessse, and maie retourne to their labour as muche more, and so thei dooe alwaies, when thei haue neede of it: for with that slepe, thei doe receiue their strength, and bee muche the lustier.

The blacke people that hath gone from these partes to the Indias, hath taken the same maner and use of the Tabaco, that the Indians hath, for when thei see theim selues wearie, thei take it at the nose, and mouche, and it dooeth happen unto theim, as unto our Indians, lyng as though thei were dedde thre or fourt howeres: and after thei doe remaine lightened, without any wearinessse, for to laboure againe: and thei dooe this with so greate pleasure, that altho thei bee not wearie, yet thei are very desirous for to doe it: and the thyng is come to so muche effecte, that their maisters doeth chalcken theim for it, and doe burne the Tabaco, because thei shold not use it, whereupon thei goe to the desartes, and secrete places to dooe it, because thei maie not bee permitted to drinke them selues drunke with Wlne, and therfore, thei are gladde to make them selues drunken with the smoke of Tabaco: I haue seen them doos it here, and happen to them as is saied. And thei dooe saie, that when that come out of the same crounce, or dreame thei finde theim selues very lustie, and thei dooc reioyce to haue been affer the same sorte and maner, sayng that there of thei doe receive no herte.

These barbarous people do vse of þ like thinges, to take awaie wearines, and not onely it is vsed in our Occidental

The Tabaco
doeth take aw-
ay wearines

The Negros
do vse it af-
ter the man-
ner of the
Indians.

The oriental
Indians doe
use the Opio
and how thei
vse it.

Indias,

101
The second part of the thynges that

Indias, but is also a common thyng in the Orientall Indias: And also in the Portingall Indias, for this effecte, thei dooe sell the *Opi* in their Shoppes, evyn as thei sell Colserua, with the whiche the Indians doe use to ease them selues, of their laboure that thei dooe take, and to bee mercie, and not to feele paines, of any greate labour of the boode, dy of mynde that maie come unto them, and thei call it there entongest them selues *Aphion*. Of this *Aphion* the Turkes dooe use for this effecte. The Soldiours and Capitanes that goeth to the warres, when thei doe laboure muche, from the tyme that thei bee lodged, that thei maye take rest, thei take *Aphion*, and slepeth with it, and thei remaine lightened of their laboure: The mosie principall people taketh the *Bague*, and it hath a better calle, and a better smell, there is putte to it muche Amber, and Muske and Cloues, and other splices: That surely it is a thyng of admiration, to see that these Barbarous people dooe take such Medicines, and so many of them doe take it, and that it doeth not kill them, rather thei take it for health and remedy, for their necessitie.

Historic.

I sawe an Indian of those partes, that in my presence did aske Apoticarie a quart of *Opi*, and I asked him wherfore he wold haue it, and he tolde me that he tooke it to put away weariness, wher he did feele hym self ouer muche greued, and afflicted with laboure, and he tooke the halfe of that as he carried, for the Poticarie gaue hym more then a pinte for twelue pence, and therewith he slepte so muche, that when he awoke from slepe, he founde hym self very muche easid of his weariness, in such sorte, that he might continue his laboure, I did interueile at it, and it seemed to me a thyng of mockery, seyng that fve or sixe graine, bee the mosie that wee can give to a sickle persone, how strong so euer that he bee, and this beyng verie well prepared, doeth cause many tymes accidentes of death. And many yeres agone standyng in the Shoppes of

an other Poticarie of this Citie, there came an other Indian, of the same Orientall Indias, and he did aske of the Poticarie, that he should giue hym *Apion*, the which Poticarie understood hym not, and I remembryng my self of the other Indian, I caused hym to shewe to the Indian *Opio*, and in shewyng it to hym, he saied that it was that, whiche he asked, and he bought a quarter of a Pinte of it, and I asked of the Indian, wherfore he would haue it, & he tolde me the same that the other Indian did: that it was because he myght labour, and ease hym self of his wearines and that he did beare burdens, and that he shoud helpe to discharge a Shippes: wherfore he myght take the one halfe that he myght therwith labour, and the other halfe after he had laboured, that therewith he myght take ease, and rest. Then I gave credite to the firste Indian, of that he saied unto me, and since I haue beleued that, whiche I haue seen, and redde, in those parkes to haue a thyng in common, for the like effectes. And truely it is a thyng worthie of greate consideration, that fve graines of *Opio* dooeth kill vs, and three score dooeth give them healthe, and rest.

The Indians dooeth use the *Tabaco*, for to suffer the dryeth, and also for to suffer hunger, and to passe daies with out hauyng nedie to eate or drinke, when thei shall trauaile by any desarte, or dispeopled Countrey, wher thei shall finde neither water, nor meate. Thei doe use of these little baules, whiche thei make of this *Tabaco*, thei take the leaues of it, and doe chewe it, and as thei goe chewyng of the, thei goe mingling with them certaine powder, made of the shelles of Cockles burned, and thei goe minglyng it in the mouthe all together, vntill that thei make it like to dowe, of the whiche thei make certaine little baules, little greater then Peason, and thei put theim to drye in the shadowe, and after thei keepe them, and use them in this forme followyng.

When thei use to trauaile by waies, where thei finde

L. j. no

*The Tabaco
taketh away
drought.*

*Little Bales
for hunger
and drought*

*The maner
to use them.*

The second parte of the thynges that

no water nor meate: Thei take a little baule of these, and thei put it betwene the lower lippe and the teeche, and thei goe chewyng it all the tyme that thei doe trauell, and that whiche thei doe chewe, thei doe swallowe it doun, and in this sorte thei dooe iourney, three or four daies, without hauyng neede of meate, or drinke, for thei feele no hunger, drach, nor weakenesse, nor trauaile doeth trouble them. I doe thinke that to iourney after this sorte, is the cause thei goe chewyng continually the little baules: thei doe byng fleyme into the mouth, and doe retourne to swallowe them into the stomacke, the whiche dooeth retaine the naturall heate, whiche doeth goe consuming, and maintaining them selues of them, the whiche wee doe see happen in many beastes, for that muche tyme of the Wintir, thei bee shut up into their Caues, and hollowe places of the yearth, and dooe passe there without any meate. And for that thei haue to consume the naturall heate, of the farnesse, whiche thei haue gotten in the Sommer, the Beare beeynge a greate and feareste beaste, muche tyme of the Wintir is in his Cauue, and doeth live without meate, or drinke, with onely chewyng his pawes, the whiche perhappes he doeth for the saied cause: this is the substance whiche I haue gathered of this Hearbe, so celebrazed and called *Tabaco*, for that surely it is an Hearbe of greate estimation, for the greate vertues that it hath, as wee haue saied.



Hereafter followeth a further addi- *Fol. 42.*

tion of the Hearbe called Tabaco: other-

wise called by the Frenchmen Nicotiane, Which

Hearbe hath doen greate Cures in the

Reatme of Fraunce and Portingall,

as hereafter at large may ap-
peare in this folowyng.

Nicotiane Chap. 76.



NICOTIANE, although it bee
not long since it hath becne kno-
wen in Fraunce, notwithstanding
it deserueth Palme and Price e-
mong all other Medicinable her-
bes, it deserueth to stande in the
first rancke, by reason of his sin-
guler vertues, and as it were al-
most to be had in admiration, as
hereafter you shall understande. For that none such as of
auncient tyme, nor of late daies, that haue written the na-
ture of plantes, did euer make mention therof. I haue ther-
fore learned the whole Historye therof, the which I learned
of a gentleman my bery frende, the first authour, inuentor,
& bringer of this hearbe into Fraunce, whersoe I thought
good to publishe it by writing for their sakes: that haue so
often hearde speakeyng of this sated heathe, and yet neither
knewe the Hearbe, nor the effectes therof.

This Hearbe is called *Nicotiane*, of the name of hym
that gaue the firste intelligence thereof into this Realme,
as manie other Plantes as haue taken their name of
certaine Greckes and Romanes, who having beeene in
strange Countries, for seruice of their common weales,
haue brought into their countries many Plantes, whiche
were unknouen. Some haue called this Hearbe the *Qua-*
nes herbe, because it was firsste sente vnto her, as hereafter

Nicotiane
the chifest e-
mong other
medicinable
hearbes.

Nicotiane
wherefore so
named.

The Queene
Motheres
herbe.

L. 1. shalbe

The second parte of the thynges that

*The graund
Priors
bearbe.*

Petum.

shalbe declared by the Gentleman, that was the first inuen-
ter of it, and since was by her giuen to divers for to sowe,
where by it might be in this Lande. Others haue named it
the greate Prouers hearbe, for that hee caused it to multi-
plice in Fraunce, moxe then any other, for the greate reu-
rence that hee had to his Hearbe, for the Divine effectes
therein contained. Many haue giuen it the name, *Petum*,
whiche is in dede the proper name of the Hearbe, as they
whiche haue trauelled that Countrey can tell. Notwith-
standing, it is better to name it *Nicotiane*, by the name of
hym that sente it into Fraunce first, to the ende that he may
haue the honour therof, accordançyng to his desert. For that
he hath enriched our Countrey, with so singular an hearbe.
Thus muche for the name, and now harken further for the
whole Historie.

*Master Ni-
colas Ambas-
sador for
the king in
Portugall.*

*Experience
of the Noli
me tangere.*

Master Iohn Nicot, Counsellor to the Kyng, beyng
Emballadour for the Kyng in Portugall, in the yere of
our Lord. 1559. 61. wente one daie to see the Py-
sons of the kyng of Portugall, and a gentleman beyng the
keeper of the saied Pysons presented hym this hearbe, as a
strange Plant brought from Florida, the same Maister Ni-
cot, hauyng caused the saide hearbe to be set in his Garden,
where it grew and multiplied marueilously, was vpon a
cyme aduertised, by one of his Pages, that a young man, a
kinne to that Page, made a sape of that hearbe hyslef, both
the hearbe and the Toise together vpon an ulcer whiche he
had vpon his cheeke vnde unto his nose, comming of a *Noli
me tangere*, whiche begā to take roote alredy at the gristles
of the Nose, wherewith he founde hym selfe marueilously
eased. Therefore the saide Maister Nicot caused the sick
young man to be brought before hym, causing the said herbe
to be continued to the sofe eight or tenne daies, this saide
Noli me tangere, was vterly extinguished and healed: and
he had sent it, while this cure was a wokyng to a certayne
Philistion of the kyng of Portugall of the moste fame, for
to

to see the further working and effect of the said *Nicotiane*, and sending for the same young man at the ende of tenne daies, the saide Physician seyng the visage of the said sick yong man certifié, that the saide *Nolmē tangere* was verely extingushed, as in dede he never felte it since.

Within a while after, one of the Cookes of the saide Embassadour hauyng almoste cut of his Thonne, with a greate Choppynge knife, the Steward of the house of the saied gentleman ranne to the saide *Nicotiane*, and dyssed hym therewith fve or sixe tymes, and so in the ende ther eof he was healed: from that tyme forwarde this hearbe began to bee famous throughout Lisboorne, where the court of the kyng of Portugall was at that presente, and the vertue of this saide hearbe was preached, and the people beganne to name it the Ambassadours hearbe. Wherefore there came certaine daies after a gentleman of the countrey, Father to one of the Pages of the Ambassadour, who was trou bled with an ulcer in his Legge, hauyng aw had the same twoo peres, and demaunded of the saide Ambassadour for his hearbe, and vsing the same in suche order as is before written, at the ende of tenne or twelue daies he was healed. From that tyme fourth the fame of that same hearbe en creased in suche sorte, that manye came from all places to haue that same hearbe. Among all others therewas a woman that had her face couered with a Ringwome rosted, as though she had a Vilour on her face, to whom the saide L. Embassadour caused the hearbe to bee given her, and tolde how she shoulde use it, and at the ende of eight or tenne daies, this woman was thoghlye healed, she came and shewed her selfe to the Ambassadour, shewynge hym of her healyng.

After theris came a captaine to present his Sonne sickle of the kynges enill to the saide L. Ambassadour, for to send hym into Fraunce, vnes whom therewas a lase made of the said hearbe, whiche in fewe daies did beginne to shewe great

Experience
for woundes.

Lisboorne.

X
The Ambas
sadors
herbe.

Experience
of an olde
ulcer.

Experience
for the Ring
wormes.

Experience
for the kyngs
enill.

The second part of the thynges that

greate signes of healynge, and finally was altogether healed of the kinges euill.

*The Lady of
Montigne
dead of a no-
lime tange-
re in her
Breast.*

*How the Ni-
cotiane was
brought into
France.*

*Distilled wa-
ter of Nico-
tiane, singu-
lare good for
short brea-
thes.*

*The figure
of Nicotiane*

*Ground fit
for Nicotia-
ne.*

The L. Ambassadour seeing so great effectes procteving of this hearbe, and having heard say that the Lady Montigny that was, dyer at Saint Germans, of an ulcer brede in her brest, that did turke to a Nolime tager, for the which there could never remeedy bee founde, and likewise that the Councelle of Russie, had sought for all the famous Phisitions of that Realme, for to heale her face, vnto whom they could giue no remedy, he thought it good to communicate the same into Fraunce, and did sende it to kyng Fraunces the seconde, and to the Quene Macher, and to many other Lordes of the Courte, with the maner of gouernyng the same: and how to applie it vnto the saide diseases, euen as he had foundit by experiance, and chiefly to the Lorde of larnac gouernour of Rogell, with whom the saide Lorde Ambassadour had great amicite for the seruice of the kyng. The whiche Lorde of larnac tolde one daye at the Quenes Table, that he had caused the saide Nicotiane to be distilled, and caused the water to be dranke, mingled with water Euphrasie, otherwise called eyebright, to one that was shorte breasted, and was therewith healed.

This hearbe hath the stalke greate, berded and stymie, the lease lardge and long bearded stymie, he doth growe in branches halfe foote to halfe foote, and is verye full of leaues, and groweth in height fourte or fift foote. In hot countries she is nine or tenne monethes in the yere laden, in one selfe tyme, with leaues flowers, and Cowdes full of ripe graines, whiche is when they are waxed blacke, and to bee ripe, whiche is when they are yet grecene, she sproutes forth neare the Roote muche, and reuiueth by a greate quantite of buddes, and notwithstanding the grain is the leaste seede in the world, and the rootes be like smale thredes.

Nicotiane doth require a fat grounde finely digged, and in the colde countrey verie well dounged, that is to saie, a grounde,

grounde, in the whiche the young be so well mingled and incorporated, that it be altogether courued into earth, and that there appere no more young.

She requireth the south Sunne, and to be planted by a wall, which may defende her against the Northe winde recovering the heate of the Sunne against her, being a warrant unto the saied hearbe against the collyng uppe of the winde, because of her weakenes and highnes.

She groweth the better beyng often watered, and reuuesth her selfe by reason of the water in tyme of droughtes she hateth the cold, therefore to preserue her from dyng in the Winter tyme, she must either be kepte in Caues made of purpose within the said gardens, or els to couer her with double Matte, and to make a Penthous of Recede on the Wall ouer the hearbe, and when the Southe Sunne shineth, to open vnto her the Dooore of the place where the hearbe is on the Southside.

For to sowe it, there must be made a hole in the grounde with your finger, as deepe as your finger can reache, then cast into that hole 40. or 50. graines of the saied Seede together stapping againe your hole, for it is so small a Seede, that if there bee put in the hole but thre or fourre graines thereof, the earth would choke them, and if the weaþer be drye, the place must bee watered lightly duryng the tyme of fiftene daies after the sowyng thereof, it may also be sowne like unto Lettis and other suche hearbes.

And when the hearbe is out of the grounde, for so muche as every Graine thereof will bryng fourthe his Twigge, and that the little Thredes of the Roote are the one with in the other, you muste make with a greate knife a greate compasse within the earth rounde about the saide place, and to lift vp the earth together with the Seede, and to caste it in a Paile of water, so that the earth be separated, and that the little twigges may swimme aboue the water, then shall you take them without breaking, the one after the other,

*The Sunne
fit for Nicotiane.*

*To water
Nicotiane.*

*How to kepe
Nicotiane in
Winter.*

*The sowing
of Nicotiane.*

*To remove
Nicotiane.*

and

The second parte of the thynges that

and you shall put eache of them againe by themselues, with the selfe same earth, and shall set them three foote from the wall, leauing lower foote space from one Twigge to another, and if the earth which is neere unto the wall, be not so good as it ought to bee, you shall prepare and amende it as aforesaide, helpyng the said Twigges so remoued by often watterynge.

*The tyme to
sowe Nicotiane.*

*Vertues of
Nicotiane.*

*Nolime tan-
gere.*

Woundes.

*Cankered
ulcers.*

*Perfume of
Nicotiane
good to
make one
voide water
at the mouth*

The Dropse

*The smoke
of Nicotiane
serueth for
to nourishe.*

*Oyntment of
Nicotiane.*

*The tyme to sowe it is in midde Apill, or at the begin-
nyng. As touchyng the vertues, it will heale *Nolime tan-
gere*, all olde Soares, and cankered Ulcers, hertes, Ringe-
wormes, grete scabbes, what evill soever bee in them, in
stamping the leaues of the said hearbe iu a cleane Morter,
and applying the hearbe and the Joyce together vpon the
griefe, and the parties muste abstaine from meace, that is,
halfe, lower, and spiced, and from strong wine, except it bee
well wattered.*

*The leaue of this hearbe beyng dried in the shadowe, and
hanged by in the house, so that there come neither Sunne,
winde, nor fyre, thereunto, and beyng caste on a Chaffyng
dishe of Coales to bee burned, taking the smoke thereof at
your mouth through a connell or cane, your hed being well
couered, causeth to auoyde at the mouth great quanticie of
slimy and flematicke water, whereby the body will be exte-
minated and weakened, as though one had long fasted, there-
by it is thought by some, that the dropse not hauyng taken
roote, will bee healed by this Perfume.*

*Moreover the inhabitauntes of Florida do noylise them-
selues certayne tymes, with the smoke of this Hearbe, the
whiche they receaue at the mouth through certaine coffins,
suche as the Grocers do vse to put in their Spices. There
be other oyntmentes prepared of the saied hearbe, with o-
ther simples, but for a truch this only simple hearbe, taken
and applied as aforesaide, is of greater efficacie, notwithstanding
one may make thereof an oyntment, which is sin-
gular, to cleanse, incarnate, and kuit together all maner of
woundes,*

woundes, the makynge of the saide. Dyntmentes is thus. Take a pounde of the freshe Leauers of the saied Hearbe, stampē them, and mingle them with newe Ware, Rosine, comon Dyle, ofeche thysse ouaces, let them boyle altogether, vntill the Joyce Nicorina be coloured, then adde thereto threē Dunces of Venise Turpentine, straine the same through a Linen clothe, and kepe it in Pottes to yonr use.

Lo, here haue you the true Pillorie of Nicorina, of the whiche the saied Loide Nicor, one of the Rynges Counsellers fiste founder out of this hearbe, hath made mes
yniue aswell by woordes as by wryting, to make
you (frendly Reader) partake therof, to
whom I require you to yelde as ha-
sie thankes as I acknowledge
my self bounde vnto hym,
for this benefite.
receiued.

M.i. The



The second part of the things that

The Saffraze.



goe

they bring from the VVest Indias.

Fol. 46.

Of the Tree that is brought from the Florida, vvhiche is called Sassafras.



Rom the Florida whiche is the
firme Lande of our Occidental
Indias, lyng in 220. degrees,
theri bryng a woodd and roote of
a tree that groweth in those par-
tes, of greate vertues, and great
excellencies, that ther heale ther
with greevous and variable de-
sales.

*The History
of the Sassa-
fras.*

It may bee three yeres past, that I had knowledge of
this Tree, and a Frenche manne whiche had been in those
partes, shewed me a peice of it, and tolde me meruelles of
his vertues, and how many and variable deseases was hea-
led with the water, whiche was made of it. I gaue at that
tyme no credite to hym, for that in these chynge of plan-
tes, and pearhes, whiche is bought from other places,
theri saie muche, and knoweth little, unlesse it bee by a man
that hath experiance of them, with care and diligence, the
Tree and the partes thereof liked me well, and I judged
that, whiche now I dooe fide to bee true, and haue seen by
experiance. He tolde me that the Frenche men, whiche had
been in the Florida at that tyme, when theri came into those
partes, theri had been sick the moste of them, of greevous
and variable deseases, and that the Indias did shewe them
this Tree, and the maner how theri shold use it, and so theri
did, and theri healed of many euilles, whiche surely it doeth
bryng admiration, that one onely remedie shold doe so va-
riable, and so meruelous effectes.

After that the Frenche menne were destroied, our Spa-
niardes did beginne to ware sick, as the Frenche menne
had dooren, and some whiche did remaine of them, did shewe

The second part of the thynges that

it to our Spaniardes, and how thei had cured them selues with the water of this meruelous Tree, and the maner whiche thei had in the usyng of it, shewed to them by the Indians, who used to cure theim selues therewith, when thei were sickle of any gries.

Our Spaniardes w^to begin to cure them selues with the water of this Tree, and it did in theim greate effectes, that it is almoske incredibl: so, with the naughtie meates and drynkyng of the rawe waters, and slepyng in the dewes, the moste parte of theim came to fall into continual Agues, of the whiche many of theim came to opilations, and of the opilations thei came to swell, and when the euill began: immediatly it began to take awaie the lustre that thei had to their meate, and then came to theim other acciden-
tes, and deseases, as suche like Feuers are accustomed to hyng: and hauyng there no remedie to bee healed, thei did what the Frenche menne had counsaileid them, doyng that whiche thei had doen, whiche was in this forme.

Thei Cooke by the roote of this Tree, and Cooke a p^tre thereof, suche as it semed to theim bette, thei cutte it smal into verle thinne, and little peeces, and cast them into wa-
ter, at discretion, that whiche thei fasse was needful, lit-
tle more or leesse, and thei sodde it the tymie that semed neve-
full, soz to remaine of a good contouur, and so thei dranke it, in the morwyng fastynge, and in the daie tymie, and at dinner
and supper, without kepyng any more waight, or measure,
then I haue saied, nor more kepyng, nor order then this,
and of this thei were healed of so many grieses, and euill
deseases. That to heare of them what thei fassid, and how
thei were healed, it doeth dyng admiration, & the whiche
were whole dranke it in place of wine, soz it doeth preserue
them in healthe: as it did appere verie well by them, that
hath come fro thence this p^tre, soz thei came all whole and
strong, and with good coulours, the whiche doeth not hap-
pen to them that dooeth come from thole partes, and from
other

*They which
were whole,
dranke it.*

other conquesstes, for thei come siche and swolne, without coulour, and in shorte space the moste of theim dieth: and these soldiours doeth trust so muche in this woodde, that I bryng one daie emongest many of them, informing my self of the chynges of this Tree, the moste parte of them cooke out of their pakettes, a good peice of this woodd, and said; Maister, doe you see here the woodde, that every one of vs doth bryng to to heale vs with all, if we do fall siche, as we haue been there: and thei began to praise so muche, to confirme the meruelous woxes of it, with so many examples of them thei were there, that surely I gaue greate credite vnto it, and thei caused me to beleue all that therof I had heard, and gaue me courage to experimenter it, as I haue doen, and as we shall see in the meruailes, whiche wee shall treat of it: and now we come to shew the discription, and forme of this Tree.

The Tree from whence thei doce cutte this woodde, whiche thei newlie brought from the Florida, called *Sassafras*, it is a Tree that commeth to his vchie greate: there bee of the middle sorte, and lesser sorte, the greater sorte is of the bignesse of a Pine Tree, of a meane height, and well nere to the makyng of it, so he is straight, he doeth caste out no more but one braunche of bowes, after the maner of a Paine Tree, such in the highest parte, he casteth out bowes after the maner of a Paine Tree, made cleane, makyng of the bowes whiche he doeth caste for he, a forme of round, nesseit hath a grosse rinde of a Tannie coulour, and byō it an other chinne rinde, of the coulour of Ashes, and byō the vner parte therof, the Trees and bowes bee white, and nere like to Tannie, the Tree and bowes are verie light, the rinde brynging calyn, it hath an excellente sweete smell, and it is somewhat like to the smell of Fenell, with muche sweetenesse of caste, and of pleasaunce smell, so muche that a little quantitie of this woodde brynging in a chamber, doeth fill the ayre conteinid in it, and his rinde hath some sharpe-

*The descrip-
tion of this
Tree.*

The first second of the thinges that

nesse of taste, the inner parte hath little smell, the higher part that doeth contain the bowes hath leaues, the whiche bee greene, after the maner of a Figge Tree, with thre pointes, and when thei are little, thei be like to the leaues of a Peare Tree, in onely the shewyng their pointes, thei bee of coullour a sade Greene, and of a swete smell, and muche more when thei bee drye. The Indians doeth use to pit them beaten or stamped upon brules, or of any manne beaten with drye blowes, and beeynge drye, thei are vsed in Medicinable thynges. Thei lose not thei leaues, thei are alwaies greene, if any doce drye and fall, theri spryngage other, it is not knouen that it hath any flower, or fruite.

The rootes.

The rootes of this Tree be grosse, or slender, consonable to the greatnessse of the Tree, thei bee light, but not so muche as the bodie of the Tree, and his bowes, but for his greatnessse, he is notable light.

Note.

The roote of this Tree is verie superficiall, spreadingyn in the upper face of the soile or grounde, and so thei roote thei up easilly, and this is a common thyng in the Trees of the Indias, that moste of them hath their rootes of small depth, and if thei carrie any plantes frow Spaine to plant if thei doe not sette them of small depth in the ground, thei give no fruite.

*The best is
the roote.*

The beste of all the Tree is the roote, and that doeth woorke the beste effecte, the whiche hath the rinde verie fast to the inner parte, and it is of the coullour Taunie, and muche more of swete smell then all the Tree, and his branche, the rinde dooeth taste of a more swete smell, then the Tree, and the water beeynge sodden with the roote, is of greater and better effectes, then of any other parte of the Tree, and it is of a more swerte smell, and therfore the Spaniardes dooeth use it, for that it is of better and greater effectes, and for the abundance that there is of it, it is a Tree that groweth nere vnto the Sea, and in temperate places, that hath not muche drynthe, nor moisture, theri be

Mountaines

Mountaines growyng full of them, and thei dooे calle a
moste swete smell: and so at the beginning when thei sawe
them, thei thought that thei had been Trees of Synamon,
and in parte thei were not deceived, for that the rinde of
this Tree hath as swete a smell, as the Synamon hath, and
it dooēt imitate it in colour and sharpenesse of taste, and
pleasaunte smell, and so the water, that is made of it, is of
moste swete smell and taste, as the Synamon is, and dooēt
the same woorkes and effectes that it dooēt.

The Tree groweth in some partes of the Florida, and
doeþ not grow in others, for that it is in the poþt of saint
Elen, and in the poþts of sainte Matheme, and it is not in
any other partes, but when the Soldiours did waxe sicke,
in places where this Tree was not, either thei carried the
to bee healed to the saied places, or thei did sende them the
Trees, by their rootes chiefly, and therewith did heale the.
The besse of the Tree is the Roote, and after the Bowes,
and after the Tree, and the besse of all is the Rindes, the
complexion and temperature of the Tree and of his Bowes,
is hotte and drye in the seconde degree, the Rinde is
somewhat moþe hotte then the rest, for that it entereth into
the thirde degree, of heate and drych, and this is mani-
felly seen in the water, and so thei that shall neve of it, must
procure to haue the Rootes or Bowes, whiche hath the
rinde for that whiche is without it, dooēt not take so good
effectes.

The name of this Tree as the Indians dooēt name
it, is called *Panano*, and the French menne dooēt call it
Sassafras, I knowe not wherfore our Spaniardes dooēt
call it after the same maner, beþng caught by the French
menne, although that some dooēt corrupte it, and calleth it
Sassafrasia, by the name that we haue from thence, and thei
of cheþeþ partes dooēt call it *Sassafras*.

The use of the Roote, or of the woodde of this Tree
the whiche we haue treated of here, is by the waie of Sec-
tynge,

*The Sassa-
fras as good
as the Sina-
mon.*

*The comple-
xiþ and tem-
perature of
the Tree.*

The name.

*The use by
secþing.*

The second part of the thynges that

*Varietie of
Seethyng.*

*That as the
author doth.*

thyng, and in this forme the Indians did shewe it to the Frenche menne, and thei vnto vs: and as the Indians hath neicher weight nor measure, thei haue not kepte in chole partes, any order in the makyng of the water of this wood for that thei doe no more in those partes, then to put a peece of woodde, or the roote at their discretion made pecces, in the water as thei doothe thinke best. And thei doe drach it after their maner, without consuming more quanticie, then when thei doothe se that the Seethyng is sufficient, so that all thei whiche hath come from those partes, are verie variable in their maner of Seethyng, whiche is no small confusion to them that shall vse it: and likewise to the Phisition that shall minister it, that whiche I doe in this I wil saie, I doe looke upon the complexion, and temperature of the sick personne, that shall take and vse this water, as also the maner and qualtie of the desease, and conformable I doe make the water, and giue it to the sick person, giuyng to the Cholerike lesse seethyng, and lesse quanticie of wood. and to the Flegmaticke more seethyng, and more quanticie of woodde, and to the Sanguine meanable: and so after this sorte to their infirmitie, accordaning to the qualties of them, for that if it bee not doen accordaning to this order, thei can not lette to make many errours in the vse of this water, & so it is conuenient that in the more thei kepe the use of the diet & government which is necessary for the desease whiche thei doo pretend to cure. Let none thinke that to take this water without order and good consideration, as many dooeth, that there shall followe health, rather takyng it without measure and without order, it shall doe vnto the muche hurt, whereby it dooeth seeme to me, that when this water shall bee ministered, as well in the deseases that it dooeth profite, as any other what soever thei bee, that thei goe to some learned Phisition, that maie dispose in the maner and makyng of the water, and the order whiche thei shall haue in takyng of it, so that in the Winter it shall be taken

taken other wise then in the Sunnyer. And other wise it must be given to the leant person then to the strong, and in an other maner it muste be taken of the choleriske, then of the flematike, and one order in the colde Region, and an other order in the hotte. Whereby it is conuenient to keepe order, measure, and forme, in the taking of it, for that there goeth no lesse in it then health and life, considering that we see it hath no price in the world, and not to let it alone to the iudgement of hym that knoweth it not.

It did hap to a gentlewoman, vnto whome for certaine indispositions of the Mother, and of grete vndeere that she had, I did counselle her that she shoulde take this Water of the woodde of Sassafras. And I gaue her the order that she shoulde take, in makynge and takynge of it, and was that whiche was conueniente for her desease, and leynynge to her, that to put much of the wood, more then I saide to her, and seething the Water more then I shewed to her, that she shoulde heale the soher, and as she tooke it certaine daies with this strength, she was burvened in s̄ he soote with a veryp grete Agewe, that not onely it strove her vppon to leaue the water, but it was needefull to let her five tymes, and put her life in aduenture, and did infame to the remedie. After she was whole, and had preuailed, she retourned and tooke the water with the order that I had first told her, and she healed very well, of her desease. It is tyme that wee come to the vertues of this woodde so excellent, and let vs speake perticularly of every one of them, as we haue knownen, and experemented.

In generall our Spaniardes in those partes of the Florida, where they haue been and now are, do vse of this afore-saide water sodden at their discretion, for all maner of deseases, without makynge exception of any. And beryng sickes of any maner of euill which commeth vnto them, sharpe, or large, hot, or colde, greuous or otherwise, they doe cure all one maner of saltem, and they heale all with one maner of

*The vertues
that it hath.*

The second parte of the thynges that -

water, without making any difference, and the best is that all be healed, and of this they haue so muche trust, that they feare not the euilles whiche are present, nor haue any care of them that be to come, and so they haue it for a vniuersall remedy, for all maner of deales.

It healeth opilations.

In one of the thinges that they haue founde most profit in this water was in Opilations, in the interiour partes, of the which they came to be swoine, and to make them full of the Dropie the most parte of them. For of the long and large heates whiche they haue, they came well nere generally to haue these Diseases. And with the water both the swellyng and the opilation went awaie, and therewith the came to be made whole of the Quotidian Agewes, whiche the most parte of them had. For in goyng thereth the mooste parte of them fell sicke, of these large and importunate feuers, in the whiche I haue experiance for this Water, bee yng taken as it ought to bee, it maketh marueilous effectes, and hath healed many therewith. For it is principall effecte that it hath, is to conforte the Liver, and to dissolve Opilations, and to conforte the Stomacke, whiche are the twoo principall thinges, that are mooste conuenient for the Pevision to doe, that the sicke may be healed of the like deales. For in these euilles it is not to be feared that the humors be corrupted, But if the principall members be hurt, so that one of the thynges that these Medicines whiche are brought from our Indias do principally, when the water of any of them are taken, is to conforte the Liver, and to amende it, that it may engender good humors, for if this be not doen, the Cure is impaine. And so our Sassafras hath a marueilous propertie, to conforte the Liver, and to dissolve Opilations, in such sort that it doe engender alowable bloud.

Historie.

I did heale a yong man whiche had an Opilation of certaine Tercians. And therof he was all swoine, in such sort that he was well nere full of Dropie. And with pounging hym,

hym many tymes with Pilles of *Rubarbo*, and by takyng of *Dialaca* amongst the saide Pourgations. And drincking the water of this *Sassafras*, continually without drinckyng of any other thyng, hee came to heale verie well, and was cleane of his swellynges, and opilatiōs. And he did not let to drinke it vntill he remained perfectly whole.

The maner of curyng with this water made of the *Sassafras*, for the Tertian Agewes and large Feuers, I will shewe you what doeth passe in this pere, that I doe write this. There haue bene many people diseased with the Tertian Agewes, so importunac that no maner of Medicine was sufficiēt to take them avare, and to roote them out, in so muche that we did let many alone, with onely good or-der, and good gouernement, without healpyng them any more. They did remaine opilated, and with euill colour of the face, and some swolnes.

And in this tyme it was, when the Capicatne generall Peter Mellendis came from the Florida, and brough him in common this woodde of the *Sassafras*, and as euerie man did so praise it, many of them that had Tertians did take Water of the *Sassafras*, keepping the order that the Souldiars gaue them; and surely I sawe in this greates maruailes, for that they healed many with the use thereof. Not onely of the Tertians that so muche did molest them, but of the Opilations and euill coulour that they had. And seyng this, I caused other to take it, that without counsell durst not to doe it. And it did very well with them, but it must be wel seen unto how it shoule be giuen and to whom, that the cause may carry with it order and measure.

That whiche ordinarilie was doen, was to geue one cup full of the water well sodden, in the Morning with Sugar or without it, and after to drinke the Water continually, that which was more simple, then the first. And as the Phy-sition doth see that whiche shall be most conuenient for him that is sicke, keepping the condicions in the takyng of

Peter Mel-lendis.

How this
water muste
be giuen.

The second parte of the thynges that

Digression.

this water we shall speake of.

And surely it is a thing that giueth greate contentment to heale onely with the drynkyng of water, beynge of a sweet smell, and good of savor whiche is taken. And dronke without any maner of grieve, and doe that woorke which sharpe Medicines and Drypes of euill sauour and taste can not doe, and such as did drynke Wine, did watter their Wine with it, and they founthemselues well withit.

To gine appetitie to eate

In one thyng was seen greate profit. In the use of this water, & was in them that had loste the luste of their meate, that it was restored to them, and the lochesunnes was taken from them, with the use of it. Maunte did preuaile and come to their health quickly. And the use of this Water doth cause lust to meate, the Souldiers doe preache it with suche admiration, that some came to leaue it, and not to drynke it, for because that it causeth them to haue so greate hunger, that they could not withstand it. And because there was no such abundance of meates wherwith they mighe satisfie their hunger, whiche the Water was cause of, they would not drynke it, who had not sufficient for their main-tenaunce, for they did al use it for a drynke in place of wine, and that it was a greate remedie for theym, that by it they mighe come whole, as apeareth by them whiche came from those partes where they doe use it.

How a Phisition of the Hauana doth use it.

In the Hauana there is a Phisition, who they doe take for a man that doth understande well in these causes. The whiche did cure manye of them whiche came in the flete from the newe Spaine sick, with onely the use of this wa-ter, without genyng or making vnto them any other bene-fite. And it did verie well with theym, for that many were healed, he gaue them to drynke as muche as they would, all the daie, and at Dinner and Supper, and in the Mornynge he gaue a Cuppe full warmed, to them that could not goe to stoole, with a little Sheuger not very white, and it went very well with them, for their going to stoole. And to other

he

he gaue Medicines of this water only and Honey, and it did a good woozke. I did cure here some that were cured in the Hauana. And beyng cured in this maner, they whiche came not well healed here they were fully healed.

In grieses of the head, and in paines thereof beyng very olde, whiche doe procede of any colde cause, taking this water hot in the Mornynge well shdden, and at Dinner and Supper, and in the day tyme simple with good gouernement as well in the Meate that is eaten, as in the rest of all other thinges. Doyng this for many daies, it cureth and healeth marueilously. It is conuenient for hym that shall do this, that he pourge hymselfe first, and in the tyme that hee must take it, that he use certayne Pilles of *Hiera simplex*, and he hath no neede to keepe hymselfe close nor keepe his Bedde. He that shall take this, it is inough that he go well clothed, and that he keepe hymselfe from the colde and ayre, and that he vse to eate good meates.

In grieses of the brest caused of cold humors, this wa-
ter doth profite much, and doth open the waiers of the brest.
It doeth consume moysture and fleames, it doeth staine the
fluxe, and the runnyng whiche doth come from the head to
the brest. It must be taken in the morning hot, and drinke
it continually simple, besides the ordenary drinkyng in the
Mornynge, it muste bee drunke simple for a long tyme. For
that these simple waters as they doe their warkes by little
and little, it is needfull that it be continued for a long sea-
son. It is good that there be put some sheuger to it, because
it may make a better woozke.

In grieses of the Stomacke when the cause is colde or
windie, after that the uniuersall evaucations bee made, ta-
kyng this water in the mornynge strong, and as it is saide
simple, at other tymes, it taketh it awaie and healeth it,
chiefly if there bee any olde griefe, for that I haue giuen it
for this effect, to men that many yeares did suffer most gre-
uous paines in the stomacke, and with takyng the water in
the mornynge.

*In the head-
ache.*

*In euils of
the brest.*

*In grieses of
the Stomake.*

The second part of the thynges that

the morning hot soz certaine daies, and continue with the simple water soz a long tyme, and taking once every weeke Villes of *Hiera simplex*, many people doe heale verie well. We haue declared how that the vse of this water doth restore the apetite lost, and geueth luste to meate.

*For the weake-
nes of the
Stomake of
them whiche
doe not con-
sume their
meate, and
for them
whiche doe
vomite their
meate.*

*In the griefe
of the Stone.*

*It canseth to
cast out gra-
nell and sto-
nes.*

*To whom
the vse of
this Water
is not con-
uenient.*

*Of the wood
for the stone.*

In the weakenes of the stomacke, and in the lacke of naturall heat, where that whiche is eaten is not consumed, it doth greate effectes, and doth healpe digestion. It consueth windes, whiche are the cause of indisgestion, it doeth take awaie a slinking breath, and unto them that doe vomite their meate, it taketh awaie this euill custome, so that they eate little, and vse continually to drinke this Water without wine. And aboue all other thinges it maketh a good breath, and a good smell at the mouche.

In the disease of the stome of the Kidnes and Raines, vsing this Water hotte when they haue this griefe, it doth greate profit, and muche more vsing it continually simple by it selfe, or with Wine, for that it doth preserue that the paine come not so continually nor so greevous. And also it maketh hym that dooeth vse it, to caste out muche Sande, where the stones be ingendred. And also it cauleth the stones that are in the Raines to be cast out, and doth staine the ingenderyng of them, for that it doth consume the fleames, of the whiche they doe principally ingender, and the windes that bee many tymes the causes of the paines.

To them whiche haue the burnyng of the Urine, and to suche whiche haue greate burning at the tyme that they doe make their water, and doe feele greate heate. Unto suche it is not conuenient the vse of this water: for because it is hot.

All suche should vse of that wood, whiche I haue written of in the firste parte of this Historie, whiche is excellent, for suche as doeth suffer the like burnynges and paines, for the stones and Sandes, for all those euilles commeth of heate: it is merueilous that it dooeth, sauyng that if there bee any Stone in the Bladder, from whiche place doeth

dooeth proceede the like burnyng: for in suche a case nonc
of these waters dooeth take effecte, but onely the Surgi-
ons Raser when the Stone is greate, it is that whiche
dooeth profit, as I haue seen in many: That saying it is
a Stone, it is no Stone, Death hath come vnto them that
had it, and if thei had been opened in tyme, thei might haue
liued many yeres, as wee haue seen in many of sixtie yeres.
and more to bee opened, and liue vntill thei came to eigh-
tie yeres and more.

And I dooe aduertise that this woodde, whiche I dooe
call of the Urine, and the Stone, dooeth make the Water
Blew, for if it doe not make the water Blew, it is not the
right woodde. And now thei bryng a woodde, whiche doeth
make the water Peallowe, and this is nat it whiche doeth
profit, but that whiche maketh the water Blew, and this
hath caused the coueteousnesse of theim that dooeth bryng
it, because thei haue seen that it is well solde in this citie,
for the manfeste profites that it doeth, in these grieses of
the Urine, by temperyng of the Raines, and the Liver, and
dooyng many other benefites: And thei bryng of all the
woodde that thei finde, and sellit for woodde of the Stone.
The same hath happened in the Mechoacan, as it came to
bee worthe twentie Ducattes the pounde, thei laded so
muche from thence of it, some not beyng ripe, other not
beuyng it, that when it is come herher, it dooeth not make
the effecte, that the good and well seasoned was wonte to
dooe. Whereby it is neevedull to see to that whiche is
taken, that it bee the same, and that it bee well seasoned.
That whiche is very White, is not suche as the Peallowe
is, in myne opinion, for that whiche is Peallowe, wee dooe
see that it dooeth better woozke: it maie bee that the very
White bee not of it, and it hath not the perfection that the
good hath. And commyng to our water of *Sassafras*, it pro-
uoketh Urine, it maketh theim to Urine well, whiche hath
the impedimente of it, chiefly if it bee by humours of colde
causes.

The wood of
the Urine wil
make the
water blew.

Faulfe Me-
choacan.

It pronoketh
Urine.

The second parte of the thynges that

causes. I did knowe a Prieſte, whiche came in this ſleete fro the Florida, and beeynge in thofe partes, he did make water very euill, and did caſte from hym ſtones, ſometymeſ with very muche grieſ, and ſome of them did put hym in hazarde of his life: when he was in the Florida, as he dranke of the water of *Saffraſ* ordinarilie, as many other did in the place of wine: he did auoide many greate and ſmall ſtones, without any paines, and after that heþer vnto he hath founde hym ſelfe whole, and very well of this euill, by dryn-kyng the ſimple water of this woodde ordinarilie, and wa-terynge his wine therwith. Many doe drinke of this water for the ſame reaſon, and thei dooe caſte out muche Sande, and doe finde them ſelues well therewith.

*In them whi-
che be lame.*

In them that bee lame or creepelles, and in theim that are not able to goe, and to moue theim ſelues. As for the moſte parte it comineth of cold humours: takyng this wa-ter hotte in the moſning, and procuryng ſweate all that he can, eatyng thynges of diet, and drincking the ſimple water continually, blyng it many daies: wee haue ſeen many hea-led. And it is to bee noſed, that in takyng of this water, there is nothing to be obſerued, as in the other waters: but when thei ſhall take it hotte, and if any ſweate come, keepe it, and after this you maie riſe and goe well clothed: it is not needfull of any thyng els, but of this and good order, and to eate good meates, and if thei ſweate not, it maketh no greate matter, and if he ſweate not, he ſhall heale. I knowe a Capitaine, one of theim whiche came from the Florida: and he did certifie me that he was ſo lame, all his bodie, that his Soldiours carried hym vpon their ſhoulders, for that in any other maner he could not ſtirre, and he was in a place where the Tree of *Saffraſ* was not, and he ſent for it and toke the water, and therewith ſweate for certayne daies, and afterwarde he cooke it ſimplie, and he did remaine moſte whole, as I did ſee hym whole, and well.

In the toothe ache, this woodde bryng broken and che-
wed with the toothe that is greeued, and leauyng that In the tooth-
ache.
which is chewed in the hole of the toothe, whiche is gree-
ued if it haue any hollownesse, and althoough that it haue
not yet, it taketh awaie the paines merueilousslie, with ex-
perience doen upon many.

In the euill of the Poxe, it doeth the same effectes that In the euill of
the rest of the water of the holie wooddy, the Chiny, and the Poxe.
Sarcaparilla dooeth: takynge it as these waters bee taken
with sweteas, puttynge by more or lesse, the seechynge of the
water, and the quanticie of the wood, as the complexion is,
and the desease of hym that shall take it. For that in colde
humours, & legmatike, it maketh a better wooke, than in
them that bee Chollerike: and so in the Poxe that bee of a
long tyme, it maketh a better and greater wooke, then in
them that bee of little tyme: and moe where there be knob-
bes, and waister of matter, and olde grieses of the hedde,
with the oder as is saied. And in these euilles, the simple
water is continually taken for a greate tyme: and it doeth
greate effectes, chiefly in them that bee leane, whiche bee
all together weakened and debilitied, with the pse of many
Medicines.

Many whiche hath the Goute, haue vsed, and done vs
to drinke of the allater of this Tree, some of them taking
it hote, as wee haue saied, and others simple continually
by it self, and wateryng their Uline therewith. That
I haue seen, is that in the olde kunde of Goutes, it doeth wel
ther euill or euill, and if it doe any good, it is to comfort
the stomacke, and to dissolue windinesse, and to glue them
some luste to their meate, and the rest of the benefites that
it doeth, is to them that bee leke of little tyme, if the cause
procede of colde, it doeth them notable profit, but if the
humour and cause bee hote, it doeth them no good, but it
hurteth them, inflamynge and causyng them to haue grea-
ter paines.

D. J. One

The simple
water.

In the which
hauet the
Goute and
the euill of
the loynnes.

To haue euill
humours
to haue euill
humours
to haue euill
humours
to haue euill
humours

The second part of the thinges that

One thyng I haue seen in many people notable profit,
with the continuall use of this water, and is in them whiche
hath soule delesased handes, whiche can not exercise them,
as thei were wonte to doo. I healed a gentelman whiche
could not write, that when he wente to write, his hande fell
doun by little and little, and the penne also, after he had
begunne to write not passe ffe or sixe letters. And he tooke
a Cuppe full of that, as was moste sodden in the morwyng,
and after he dranke it, he was two howers in his bedde,
and after he rose and went about his busynesse. And he did
eate at his Dinner good meates, and at his Supper dier,
and dranke the simple waer of the self same Saffras, and
he was healed very well: hauyng spente a greate somme of
money on Phisicions and Medicines, the whiche did not
profite hym any thyng, vntill he came to bee remedied in
the order as it is saied.

The water
hot maketh
a man go to
the stooole.

Many did certifie me that, whiche now I doe see by ex-
perience, learned of them that were sick in the Hawnes,
and could not goe to the stooole, that the Phisition whiche
is there, did cause them to take in the morwyng falyng, a
good Cuppe full hote of the Water of the Saffras, and it
did soften the beallie, and thei went to the stooole verie well,
the whiche we haue seen her by experiance. And there was
a Soldiour whiche did certifie me, and did yronie it, with
others of his companie, that hauyng stoooles by indisgestiō
and rawnesse of stomake, for wante of heat, it tooke them
awake, with takyng of one good cupfull of this water eu-
ry morwyng falyng, and so with drynkyng a continuallly,
but that whiche he dranke every morwyng, he dranke it
colde, and yet nevertheless he healed very well of the stooole,
whiche he had many yeres.

For the go-
ing to the
stooole by in-
digestiō.

In the euill of
Women.

The euill of
the Mother
and windi-
ness.

In grieves of women the Water of Saffras doeth
greate profit, and in especially in that whiche is called the
euill of the Mother and where there is whidene, it con-
sumeth and dissolueth theim, and any maner of colde or che-
beallie

beallie, and it doeth dissolve the swellyng of it, curyng any maner of desease whiche doeth proeide of the Mother. And this is so experimeted, and so put in use, that many hath been healed with this water, that never thought to haue healthe. And in the wth holding the Monethly custome that commeth, not to women, this water maketh a meruelous woozke, by prouokynge and makynge it come to them, that wholie dooeth lacke it, takynge one Cuppe full of this water in the morwyng: and drynkyng it ordinary at Dinner, and at Supper, and in the daie tyme beynge more simple, then that in the Moryng, hauyng good regimente, and dooynge other thynges whiche maie helpe the water, that it maie bee prouoked. And vnto them that it dooeth not come well it dooeth manifest prouise, takynge the water in the forme as it is saied, keepeynge them the tyme that they doo take it, from suche thynges as maie offend them, and beynge vseid it dooeth dispilatit, and dooeth make a good coullour in the face, as it is seen by the woozke of them that doeth vse it, hauyng ned of it. Let them beware, if they haue muche heate, or bee of a hott complexion, in suche case let them moderate the quantite of the wodde, and the seechyng of the water, that as is conuenience, and this is easie to bee dooen, by seeyng how it goeth at the beginning, with the vse of it, and accordyng therewnto they maie rise or falle as it seemeth to be necessarie.

Some women dooeth vse of this Water, for to make them wth childe, and in some it hath made the effete known, that whiche I can saie, is that a gentlewoman, beynge many yeres that she was married, without hauyng childe, she tooke this water, for that her housebande tooke it for certayne easilles of spilacions, and of an age we that remained with hym of certain double tertians whiche he had and contynyng in the raskynge vseit in the Moryng herte, and at Dinner simple, and at Supper and in the daie tyme keepeynge a good governynge, of the whiche it came to passe

*with holding
the custome
of Women.*

*Where as is
muchhe heate
this water is
not conuen-
ient.*

*To make wo-
men with
childe.*

The second part of the thynges that

Note.

that she was with childe, and brought forthe a Sonne.

And I doo understande, that one of the principall vertues that this water hath, is to put awaie the Mother for this effecte, for the mosse parte of women that hath no chil- dren, is for the greate colde that is engendered in the Mo- ther, the whiche dooeth let the cause of generation, and as the water dooeth consume it, confortyng and dissoluyng the windes, that is the lete of it: I am sure that it will doe manifel profit, as we haue seen that thei whiche doe not hyng forthe chiliden, for hauyng to muche heate and drynes, thei use not of this Water, for because it will not profit them, and if thei doe take it and feele hurce therof, let thei not put the fault to the water, but to the complexion, sayng that it is not conueniente for them.

This water
doth make
fasse.

The use of this water dooeth make fasse, and it is cer- tainly knownen, for we haue seen many leane and sicke, that hath taken it, and hath healed of their euilles, and hath re- mained with more fleshe, and better colour, whiche those people that dooeth come from the Florida, doeth praise verie muche, and thei all doo saie, that the use of this water dooeth make fasse, and it dooeth happen unto many, and not onely it healeth them of their deseases, but also dooeth make them remayne with a good colour. And so it semeth by them that commeth from that countrie, for because thei come all fasse, and of a good colour. I doo beleue as thei were very sicke, that so thei were very leane and yeallowe, and as thei healed of their infirmities whiche thei had, thei tooke fleshe, and became to haue a good colour, ingende- ryng in the Liver good blood, of the whiche the members were better maintained; then when thei were sicke. And surely it is a greate thing that this water doeth this effect, consideryng that it is hotte and dry, if it were not for the causes that is saied. And I haue seen many that entered in, to take the water of the wood leane, and with an euill colour, and commeth forth strong and fasse, and of a good colour,

couloure, eatynge no other thyng then Resynges, Almonds, and Bisket.

In Pestilent and contagious deseases, that we haue seen in the time of the Pestilence past, there be many that desire to drinke it, for to preserue them from that euill. And wee doe see that none of them whiche did use it was wounded of the desease, that went. Many did use to carrie a peece of the Roote of the wood with them to smell to it continually, as to a Pomander. For with his smell so acceptable it did resistre the infected ayre: I caried with mee a peece a greate tyme, and to my seemyng I founde greate profite in it. For with it and with the chewing of the rinde of the *Cidra*, or of *Lemmon* in the morynge, and in the daye tyme. For to preserue healeth it hath a greate strength & property. It semeth to mee that I was deliuered by the healpe of God from the fyre, in the whiche we that were Phisitians went in, blessed be our Lord GOD that deliuered vs from so great euill. And gaue vs this mooste excellente Tree called *Sassafras*, whiche hath so greate vertues, and doth suche marueilous effectes as we haue spoken of, and more that the tyme will shewe vs, whiche is the discouerer of all thinges. It shall doe well to shewe the quantite of the woodde, and also the quantite of the water, wherein it shall be sodden, and put a Rule in waight and measure, in effectes, and temperatu- res, beynge hot, and others, in colde.

I will tell you the oder that ought to be kept in taking the water of this excellent wood, whiche ought to be made comfortable to the desease of hym that shall take it, and ac- cording to the quantite and complexion of the sick bo- die. For unto the cholerike person the water ought to be geuen lesse sodden, and with lesse quantite of wood, and to the flematicke more sodden, and with more quantite of wood. So the deseases should be considered of. Unto them that are verie colde they ought to haue the water more sod- den, and with more quantite of wood. And unto them that

*In Pestilente
and corrupt
ayres.*

*How this wa-
ter ought to
be made in-
generall.*

The first second of the thinges that

be not so colde, but doe participate of some heate: the wa-
ter ought to bee lesse sodden, and with lesse quantite of
woode. The like shall be in the hot or colde tyme, or of the
age of the person, or the most causes to this respect and pro-
portion. And for the more light, I will put here the maner
how this water ought to bee vled, the whiche shall serue
howe that they maye rise or fall, conformably to the op-
tion whiche shall seeme good to euerie one. For in these in-
firmities that be verie colde, they muste put vp the water in
Quillars, both in seethyng and also in quantite of the
woode. And in the deseases that are not so cold, or that doe
participate of any heate, they shall put the water lower, in
Quillars, seething it lesse, and puttynge lesse woodde, the
maner and order is this.

*The maner
to make it in
pecatuler.*

You shall chuse the freshest wood that may bee had, and
that it haue a Rinde. For that woodde whiche hath not the
Rinde, is not good, nor it doth take effect, you must procure
that it be of the roote, for that is the best of the tree for this
effectes and cures, for the deseases whiche we haue spokeu
of. And if in case there be no roote, then the bowes are the
beste that doe growe in the higher parte of the Trees, and
in case the bowes lacke, then is the tree good: So that the
one and the other haue the Rinde of the Roote, let there be
taken lesse in quantite, and more of the Bowes, and muche
more of the tree, that it must be double more then the roote,
let vs speake of the bowes as of a thing in the middest, be-
tweene the Roote and the Tree, and is that whiche conti-
nually they doe byyng, of the whiche you shall take halfe an
Dunce, and cut it as small as may be. And it must be put in-
to thre Pottels of water, in a newe Earthen Pot, and it
muste be a sleepynge twelue howeres: and after it muste bee
sodden at a fyre of Coales, vntill the twoo partes be con-
sumed, and the one remaine. And after it is colde let it bee
strained and kept in a glasse vessell, and vpon those small
cuttinges of wood that haue been already sodden, let there
be

*The order
how to make
strong water*

*Simple wa-
ter.*

hee put other three Pottels of water, and let it leeth vntill halfe a Pottell be consumed, and no more, and after that it is colde let it be strained and keapt in a glasse vessell. Let the fift Water bee taken in the Moryng fastynge, halfe a Pint hote, and keape your selfe warme, and procure to swete, then remoue your selfe into hot cloathynge, and wipe your selfe from the sweat. And eate of a Henne rosted and drye Fruite, and Conserua, and drinke of the seconde Water at Dinuer and Supper, and in the daye tyme. And doe you rise and go well cloathed, and flie from all thinges whiche maye offend you. And at night make a lichte Supper, and eate drye fruite and Conserua, and doe you eate no fleshe at night, and drinke of the seconde water. And this you maye doe for as many daies as you find your self greate, & if you finde your self well with the vse of this water taken in this maner, procede forward, vntill you be whole, and if not, then goe, taking of the strong water every thirsday, and drinke of the simple water continually. After this order it may be geuen in all deseales, that we haue tracced of, and it will profitte. But many will not put thei selues to this labour, the whiche truely is the best of all others, and that whiche is most conuenient, thei may make the simple water in this forme.

Let there bee taken halfe an Dunce of the woodde, little *Simple wa-
ter.* more or lesse, with the condicions salde, and let it bee made
small peeces, and leeth it in thre Pottels of water, vntill
halfe bee sodden awaie, rather more then lesse. And of this
water you may drinke conculquely at Dinet and at Sup-
per, and in the daye tyme, and surely taken in this order it
doth and hath doen marueilous effectes, and moste greate
Cures, in large deseales, and impotzunate, takynge it and
keepynge a good gouernemente in youre Heate and other
thynges prohibited. And how so euer it be beyng dronk so
simple it doeth greate profitte. They that can not forbeare
the drinking of Wine, may watter their Wine therewith,
so.

The second part of the thynges that

for it will rather make it of a better case and sweetenesse,
for this water hath a most sweete smell, and easie, and aboue
all, it doth maruylous effectes, as we haue seen and doth see
in diuers and sundrie deseases, in the whiche ordinarie re-
medies of phisike doth not profite, with greate examples
whiche we haue hereof.

Note.

And it is to be concidered that principally it doth profite
in large and colde deseases, and where there is windines,
and other euilles, that doeth runne this course, the whiche
shall be knownen forwhiche by hym that shall haue neede of
it, and doth use it. And one thing is to be vnderstoode, that
hysing it in the order as is shys, althoough that hee whiche
doth take it hath no neede thereof, it can doe hym no hurt,
rather if it be well considered it will doe manifest pro-
fite, in the tyme that he shall take it. Althoough he
leaueth the taking of it when he doth see that
he fundereth not the profite whiche he
desireth, nor that it hath doen
hym any hurte or harme
the tyme whiche he
hath taken it.

Carlo

thei bryng from the VVest Indias.

Fol. 57.

CARLO SANCTO.



I Of the Carlo Santo, a Roote brought from the newe Spayne.



Hey vode bryng from the Newe Spaine within this thre yeres a merueilous roote and of great vertues, whiche is called Carlo Santo, the whiche a Father of saint Frauness order hath discovered and published in the province of Mechoneas, beyng taught by an Indian of that countrey beyng verie wise in these thinges, and a man of greate experiance, of the vertues of them. In the fiste parte wee haue saide that there be many Medicinable hearbes, which haue greate secreteis, and vertues. This our Carlo Santo doth growe in that Province, in places whiche are verie

*The roote of
Carlo San-
cto.*

*Where it
growes.*

P. 5. temperate,

The second part of the thynges that

*His forme
and figure.*

temperate, whiche bee not dry nor verie moist. His forme and figure is like to oure wilde Hoppes of Spaine, for it carieth a Lease as they doe, and it runneth vp by any other thing that is neere unto it, and if it haue nothyng to leane vnto: then he lieth all along vpon the grounde, his colour is a sadde greene, he carrieth neither flower nor fruite, the smell that he hath is little, and acceptable to some. Out of the Roote doth spring a grosse Tree, and doth calle for the other Rootes of the greernes of a Finger, he is white in colour, and hath a Rinde whiche falleth fram the inner parte, the hart of it is maruellously wrought: for it is compounded of certaintie small Boxdes verie chinne, and they may be deuided by one and one, the Roote hath a pleasaunte smell, and being chawed, it hath a notable bitternesse, with some sharpenesse of taste, this Roote hath his vertue in the Rinde.

*His coulour.
His smell.*

The Roote.

*His harte
marueilous.*

*His vertue
is in the rind
of the roote.*

In the shippes that be now come, there came the sample of it, and now there is more knowledge of his vertues then before there was. Many of them that came in this Fleete from the new Spaine, do speake much good of this roote. But he that speakest most of it, is a Gentleman that came from Mexico, and brought a good quantity of it. That as he saith, and also what wee haue experemented of it, we will speake of: and also of his complexion and temperature, it is hotte, and dry, in the firste parte of the seconde degree.

*In Rewmes
and runnynges
of the Nose.*

The principall effect that this Roote doth profite in, is in Rewmes, and Runnynges of the head, for it causereth them to be caste out at the Mouth, and bringeth them from the head, by chawyng a little of the Rinde of the Roote, a good tyme, and it must be in the Mornynge fastyng, it maketh to cast out muche sleame, and humors of the head, that woulde goe to the Stomacke, and other partes, and before this be doen, it is conueniente that the pacient be purged.

*It pronoketh
vomit.*

Some that doth chews it, whiche can easely vomitte,

doth

doeth vomitte with chelyng of it, and it maketh to caste out muche Choller and Fleume, and muche more it maketh them vomitte, if thei take the seethyng of it, for it maketh the humour to bee caste vp, whiche is in the stomacke with muche easinelle. The roote doeth confort the stomacke, and it doeth also confort the gummes by chelyng of it, and doeth fortifie the teeth, and doeth preserue theim from Wormes, and that thei rotte not, nor corrupte: it maketh a good smell in the mouthe, and because it is bitter, it is conueniente after that you haue chewed it, you washe your mouthe with wine, that the bitternesse maie bee taken awaie.

In the infirmitieis of women chiesly, where opilations are, and lacke of purgation, the pouder of the rinde of the Roote doeth dissolve them, and taketh them awaie, and maketh that the purgation come well with the use thereof, it must be taken with wine, or with water, sodden with Coriander, and Synamon, the whiche thei shall drinke, whiles thei dooe take it: it dissolueth windes, and conforteth the Stomacke whiles thei take it. Thei annointe their beallie with the Oile of liquid Amber, and Dialtea of equall partes, and firste thei must bee purged, and that thei kepe in all good order, and good government.

In the euilles of the harte, chiesly beeyng toynd with the Roote, the saied pouders and the water sodden with the rinde of the Roote, dooeth make very greate effectes: Thei muste take the pouder in the order as it is saied: and the weight of twelve pence of the Roote, cutte smiall and sodden in one pottell and a halfe of water, unel halfe bee sodden awaie: and then caste into it the weight of twoo shillynges of the rindes of Sidores beeyng drye, and the weight of twelve pence of Synamon made in pouder, and giue it certaine seethynges with theim, and then straine it. And thei shall take every mornyng a small vessell of sixe ounces of this seethyng with Suger, because it is some-

It doth comfort the teeth, and doth stay and keepe them from worme ea- yng.

In diseases of women it pronoketh Purgation.

It dissolueth windes and conforteth the stomacke

In the euil of the harte.

The second parte of the thynges that

*In the euill
of the Poxe.*
what bitter, or without it as you please: and it is to bee no-
ted, that before you do beginne to vse it, you make the uni-
uersall euacuations, whiche shall bee conuenient.

This gentleman doeth saie whiche bryngeth this roote
that it profiteth muche, in the deseale of the Poxe, takyng
of it in powder, or the seechyng of it: the whiche I haue not
experimented, for that we haue so many remedies for this
euill, that we haue made no experiance of this: he saieþ
that it is to bee taken without keeþyng more, then when
thei be a takyng of the water, or powder, that then thei keþe
good order and good gouernement in their meates, and in
all other thynges.

In the Fallynge sicknesse.
In the Fallynge sicknesse, a strong desease, and well nere
incurable, thei saie that it hath a greate propertie, and
doeth greate effectes: takyng the pouder of the rinde of the
roote, with wine or with water, as is moste conuenient for
hym that shall take it. I did counsaill one here, who was of
more then fourtie yeres of age, and it was a lange tyme
that he had it, and therer unto he hath not felte more then
bomiece with the pouder, when he taketh it, and he doeth
take by muche Choller, and the fainenesse is not so greate
as it was wonte to bee. It seemeth to me, that it can not
take it awaie. For it shoulde doore the effecte in them, that
doeth not passe twentie and five yeres. And unto that tyme
thei haue remedy. I will proue it byon suche: it would bee
no little good, that it might doore the effecte that is spoken
of it.

*In grieses of
the heade.*
In grieses of the heade, thei doe vse this roote in those
partes, as a greate and sure remedy, I will saie what did
passee. The firste tyme that I sawe this Roote, was in the
power of one whiche was sick, who came from *Mexico*,
and he brought it for a greate thyng, saying: that he healed
and tooke awaie the paines of the heade, the whiche he had
certain daies, and he asked me if that he shoulde vse it, I ta-
ken of the Roote, and it seemed to me that as I haue saied,

and

and I cousailede hym that he shold vse it, as thei had wil-
led hym to dooe in *Mexico*, and so he did chewe it in the
mornynge, it tooke awaie the paines of the hevde, whiche a
long tyme had molested hym.

After this a passenger tolde me, whiche came in the
Shipp, where the gentleman came that brought a quan-
titie of this Roote, and he chewed it well, and did disfleume
therewith, and imediately it tooke awaie the paine, and he
shewed me a little that remained thereof, whiche was the
same that I sawe, and since that some haue vsed it, and it
hath doen very well with them.

In the tooth ache, thei that haue brought it into Spain
doe it muche esteeme of it. And I beyng in the lodgyng
where this manne was, whiche brought the roote, the hoste
of the house did certifie me, hauyng the toothe ache very
greeuous, that it tooke it awaie from hym with chewyng
the rinde of the Roote, with the same side where the toothe
was whiche greued hym, disfleyming as muche as he could.
And I beyng one daie in the Custome house curyng a Ge-
noues whiche was there, an other of the same Nation did
complainche unto me of the tooth ache, and wee caused to be
brought some of the saied Roote, and in the presence of as
many as were there, he did chewe the rinde of this Roote,
hauyng verye greate paines, and he did auoyde muche
fleume, and in disfleyming it beganne to take awaie the
paines, and before he were from thence it was wholie ta-
ken awaie. Daies past I had a griefe in one toothe, that
it pained me all one Nigchte, and parte of one Date, and I
tooke out of a garden whiche I haue in my house, certaine
leaues of *Tabaco*, and also the afore saied roote, and I che-
wed bothe together, and disfleumed, and the paines wente
from me, and recoured no more to me, beyng more then
sire monethes that it paste. This is the effecte, that I haue
obtained of this *Carlo Sancto*, beyng so little tyme knownen
it is enough. The tyme will discouer the rest, and as shal-

*In the tooth
ache.*

*The second part of the thynges that
shall understande of it, wee will giue notice thereof.*

*¶ Of the Beades, & whiche bee
called of Saint Elen.*



*The Beades
of the rootes
offaist Elen.*

*The forme
of them.*

The plant.



Rom the Florida they doe bring certaine
rounde Rootes whiche are called the
Beades of Saint Elen. And they haue
this name by reason that they bee in a
place of that Counterie that is so called,
they are greate large Rootes, deuided
into seuerall pieces, and cuttinges, eue-
ry piece by hymselfe, they remaine rounde as Beades, the
whiche beyng bored in the middest, they doe make of them
Beades for to prae upon, whiche the Souldiers doe hang
about their neckes, for a thing of greate estimation. They
drie them, and they are as harde as a bone, in the outward
parte they are blacke, and within white, and the Rinde is
toyned in suche sorte, that the Rinde and the harte is
made all one, the whiche are wrought after they are drie,
and this Roote beeyng tasted, hath a sweete smell, with a
good taste. And it seemeth by the taste that it is a kinde of
Spice, it is like to *Galange*, they are of the thinkenesse of
a mans Thumbe, sumwhat lesse, the Plante hath no greate
stalke: the Bowes doe spicade by the grounde, and doe cast
out the leaues broad and greate, and verie greene. It gro-
weth

Wch comonly in moyste places, his complexion is hot in the ende of the second degré, and moyste then in the first, his vertues are these.

The Indians doe vse the Hearbe beaten betwéene twoo stones when they precende to washe them selues, rubbyng all their bodye with it: for they say that it doeth knit their Fleshe together, and it doth comforste them with his good smell. And this they doe for the moyste parte every daie, for the greate profite that they finde in it.

In grieves of the Stomacke, the Indians doe vse it, in takyng the Pouder of it, and our Spaniardes doe take it, for the same purpose, takyng it in Wine, beeving grounde small, of the which I haue sien notable experience in some.

In the grieve of the Stone of the Kidneis or Raines, the Pouder of this Roote doth make a knowen effect. For that some haue taken this roote made Pouder in Wine, hauing the grieve, and it hath beene taken awaie. And I doe not marueile that his manifest quantitie is sufficiete, to dooe the like effectes.

In grieves of the Urine of them that cat not pisse well, takyng the Pouder, it doth profite and expell it. A ching v- sed of many that haue come from those partes, so that they haue vsed it in the like evilles, and here hath been seen the same experience. And one that had a Stone whiche coulde not auoyde it from hym, and did vse certaine daies of the Pouder of this roope, did easelie auoyde the same. A Souldier did bryng Beades at his Necke, made of these rootes, and met with mee one day, and as ked mee if I knewe those Beades, and of what they were, and hee saide it was tolde hym that they were of Rootes of Genciana. I declared unto hym, that the Beades were made of certaine Rootes, that were in the Port of Saint Elen, and that they were not of Genciana. And then he tolde mee greate vertues of theym, and the effectes so good that the vse of theym had dooen, whiche I did beleue: for it seemeth well in the roote to haue greate

The hearbe
is stamped.

In grieves of
the stomacke

In the grieve
of the Stone
in the Kid-
neis or Ray-
nes.

In grieves of
the Urine,

The second partes of the thynges that

greate Medicinall vertues, accordyng to his fashion, and
sweete smell, and by that whiche I had experimeted of
them.

If the Guacatane.



*The descrip-
tion of the
Guacatane.*



They haue brought in these shippes
an hearbe from the new Spaine
that the Indians doe call Guaca-
tane, and it is like to oure wilde
Tyme, sauyng that it hath noe
smell, it is a little hearbe whitish,
I knowe not if he carry Flower
or fruite, the hearbe I haue with-
out the Roote, the name that it
hath amongst the Indians is as aforesaide. And the same
name the Spaniardes haue gauen it, the Indias doe use it
for their infirmities, wherof we will speake, and for the
same the Spaniardes doe use it, therein the Indias, & they
also whiche haue brought it hether, with notable profit.

In griefe of the Piles they doe use it in this forme, they
grinde or stamp the hearbe very small, and doe washe the
Piles with wine, in the which there is sodden this hearbe,

and

*In the de-
sease of the
Piles.*

they bryng from the West Indias.

Fol. 61.

and if there bee heate in them, they seeth it in water, and with that hot feethynge they washe them, and then they drie them solly, and cast the pouder of this hearbe vpon them, and surely the effect that it doth is marnellous, after I saw his good effectes I muche esteeme the hearbe.

Whensoeuer you haue any griefe of colde or of windnes
in any parte of the body wheresoever it bee, puttynge Tur-
pentine in all partes, wheresoever the griefe is: And putt-
ing the pouder of this Hearbe vpon small ground to it,
and a Linnen Clothe laide vpon it, that it may stande faste.

as a Plaister, in suche sorte, that it be not taken awaie,

but ill the griefe be gonne. And of this there is

manifest experiance, by them of the Indias,

and also by vs of Spaine. The pouder

of this Hearbe calle vpon little

soares, and especially in the

hidden or secrete pla-

ces, vouch-

make

the micleane,

and doeth mundeine

and vyle

smell.

Q. i.

90f



The second part of the thinge is that

¶ Of a certayne kinde of Barley.





Hei doe buyng likewise from the newe Spaine, a kinde of Barley, whiche thei call small Barley, thei did give it this name, for the likenesse whiche it hath unto our Barley: it doeth cast out an eare like unto it, and in the vaines the seede is sherte, but it is differente to it in his qualites and vertues; for that this small Barley, is the strongest poison, whiche at this daie in Hearbe, or Plane hath been seen: In so muche that it dooeth wroake the same effecte, whiche *Sublimatum* dooeth: and where so euer it bee needfull to burne, or to eate awaie dedde or rottene fleshe, puttynge the powder of this seede thereto, it will doe the like wooake that any burnyng Iron shall dose. It doeth extinguishe and kill any Canker, how strong so euer it bee, it killeth and expelleth wormes, where so euer thei bee, it eateth fleshe whiche is naught and rotten, takynge it from the soares, and maketh theim cleane from suche euill fleshe.

The Indians say that thei had no *Sublimatum*, nor other remedies whiche wee haue, when thei shold use of the like, thei had and haue this seede moste strong, and surely it is, and so thei doe use it as a remedy moste strong, and of greate efficacie. These powders must bee put to it, by little and litle, more or lesse, conformatiblie to the greatenesse of the euill, puttynge thynges defensiu, whiche is vised to bee put, when that thei doe use of the like remedies.

In olde soares and sithie where it is needfull: that naughtie rotten fleshe bee eaten awaie, with takynge of this seede, and grindynge of it, and beyng dissolued well with water of Lanen, or of Roseg, weatynge in the cleare water, that shall remaine bypon, with some small clothes, or puttynge in place of the small clothes, thredes of Linen clothe, weate in the water, it cleanseth the soare, eatynge the euill fleshe in suche sorte, for euill, olde, and sithie that the soare

*It is moste
strong and
mighty po-
son.*

*It killeth the
Canker.*

*It killeth
wormes.*

*It eateth
rotten fleshe.*

*How it must
be ministred*

*In cold fleshe
soares where
it is needfull
that they bee
cleansed.*

The second part of the thynges that

bee, it leueth it cleane, and beynge put to the slephe it doeth sover and heale, and after this is dooen, you muste use the Medicines whiche hath vertue to ingender slephe. And the effecte of this seede is no moare then to mundifie, and make cleane, and to take awaie the superfluitie of the wounde.

In the Beastes it maketh the same effecte and better.

The self same effect that this seede doeth in vs, it doeth in the beastes, in the whiche for the moste parte are vertie euill soares, beynge Cankered, and full of Wormies, the seede beynge putte vnto it, if the cause bee so greate, that it doeth require it, or the water of it, as it is sated, it maketh the like woanke, as wee haue spoken of, and better, byng alwaies the defensives as is convenient, where suche Medicines bee purte, for that it is a medicine moste strong, for it hath neede of all.

Historie.

I will shew you what happened to me with it, an Indian brought me this seede with many other Hearbes, and I goyng discoueryng by theim, beynge come to this seede, I tooke a graine and putte it into my mouche, to proue it. He that brought it, as one whiche knewe it well, kepe back my hande, and would not suffer me to proue it: and for all this I parted with my catch one graine, whiche is no greater then one graine of Hempe seede, and lesser, and hath likenesse of it, at the tyme that it came to the pointe of the tongue, the seede beynge parted, made me a blister vpon it, whiche vured with me certaine daies: I commende it to the Devill, and then I belene what thei had certified me of it. I did beginne to make experiance of it, and it did woanke more effectually then was spoken of it. It is hotte in the fourth degree, and more if there be any more degrees.

An hearbe whiche healeth the euill of the breast.

Also I haue an Hearbe that beynge sodde, and the water of it taken hotte, it healeth the euils of the breast: I knowe not the name of it, but in the remembraunce thereof which came, it was written.

An hearbe whiche doeth

And an other whiche doeth cause to caste out the vede chylde of the beallie: of these the Indians hath greate experiance.

rience for this affeete: and once in cheste countries, he hath
prospered.

Ther brought me twoo dyre Deardes, whiche I would
have been gladd to haue seen them greene, the one of them
beyng in the helde in all his force, if a manne or woman
doore putte their handes vpon hym, to thewhch he falleth
dounne deode vpon the grounne: and the other beyng lying
abroade vpon the grounne, in couchyng it to gacher it, is
shutteh ic self together as a Cabige of the Countre of
Murcia. Thynge meruelous, and of muche considera-
tion.

I haue blacke Clebore, brought from the Province of
Mehoscan, like to that of Spaine, and dooeth the like
effete.

Dates past a yonge manne whiche cooke counsaile of
me, that came from the Province of Quito: and he beeynge
with me, ther came to me a neighbour of myne, sayng,
that his daughter was verie sickle of the Flise, and I did
cure her, and her deasease increased with blood, requiring
me that I shold goe to visiter her: the Indian whiche was
with me asked me, if ther were stooles of blood, I saied yea:
and he saied vnto me that he would give her a thynge, that
beeynge made pouder and taken, would take them awaie
for the whch, and that in the Province of Quito, it had been
experimented many tymes: the Father of the sickle wente
with hym to his house, and he carried certayne peeces of
fruite, whiche did seeme to bee of a greate Tree: of the one
parte theri were verie smoth, and of coulour Deallowe,
and of the other theri were verie sharpe, and verie Red, that
it did seeme a Purple coulour, it was small grounde, and
he gaue the pouder to the sickle woman, with the water of
the hed of Rose, once that Euening, and an other tyme in
the Morning, and imediately the Flise did cease, and from
that tyme was better, whereby she came to be whole.

And as I never sawe hym, after hee gaue it to her, al-
tho^{ugh}

make a wo-
man to caste
from her a
dead Childe.
Two marue-
lous heabes.

Blacke Cle-
bore.

Historie.

The second part of the thinges that

though I procured it with greate diligence, I knowe not what it was, nor what hee was that gaue the fruite, and in this sorte there be many other thinges in our Orientall Indias, whiche haue greate vertues, and greate medicinall secretes, the whiche it shal be knownen every daye more, and they will bbe discouered, that we maye profite oure selues of them.

Digression.

At the whiche thinges we haue seen manifestly in the profite that they haue doen, whiche hitherto haue been brought. Seeyng that thele marueilous workes all the worlde hath proued, healyng with them deseases whiche all other phisickes coulde not heale, as it is manifestlie seene, in all that doe use them with great utilite and profite, the whiche all is owing to my diligence, and care. For that as I haue written of them in the first parte of this medicinall history, whiche haue been well noted in the worlde, for the thinges that in it is treated, and for that you may see the fruite that this my labour haue doen, I will put here a Letter that a Gentleman of the Peru sent mee well nere two monthea past, by the whiche you shall see by reason of that I wrote, in the firste parte thei haue discouered the Bezaar Stones, in the Peru, that with such greate estimation thei doo bring from the India of Portyngall, and howe by the relation and other whiche I wrote, They came to the knowledge of them, a thing truly of greate estimation, and worthy to be muche made of, seeyng that it is a thyng so marueilous and of so greate pice, and haue been founde in our Indias, and are so easie to bee had and so true, that we haue not any neede to doubt of their effectes and vertues, the whiche is not so of them that thei bring from the Orientall Indias. For if there come tenne that are true, there cometh an hundred whiche are false. Whereby they that doe buye them ought to looke muche unto it, that they bee not deceived, those whiche are brought from oure Indias, are all of one sorte, for they differ not, but in beyng greate or small. The effectes

effectes whiche they vae bee admirable, for that their vertues are most mightie against all venome and pestilent A-
gewes, and venomous humors. As in the chirde parte God
willyng we will treat of the maner. That the Letter had
was this. There came a Paket as of Letters iurolled in a
stare clothe, so well made: that ther mighte passe to any part
beving never so faire, the whiche being openes, I founde
a small Chest made of a little peice of Cork, of a good
thickenesse sticke together, whiche was woychie to be seen,
and in the hollowesse of it came the herbes, and the fiedes
that the Letter speakeith of, every chynge written, what it
was, and in one line of the Cork, in a hallowe place,

ther came thre Bazaar stones, cloased with a

Parchement, and with Ware, in good or-

der. The Letter was written with

verie small Letters, and sum-

what hard to reade, in the

scripturale

The second part of the thynges that

To the right w^eorshipfull master doctor
Monardus Phisition in Scuill.



I haue written to you the right worshipfull and famous doctor, it will seeme a newe thyng to your worshippe, that I beynge not learned, nor of your profession, to write to you in thynges of your facultie, beynge a Soldier that haue followed the warres in these countreys all my life. I haue dooen this because I am affectioned to your worshippe, by reason of a booke, whiche you haue compiled of the Medicines which are in these partes, and of the vertues and benefites, that by theim hath been dooen, whiche is so greate that I can not declare it, as it is worthie, for by it wee haue order howe wee shoulde vse of the remedies whiche wee haue here, but we did vse of theim without rule or measure: that neither thei did woorke effecte, nor with theim the people were well remedied, whiche now is to the contrarie, and by meanes of your booke, there hath been people remedied, that neuuer thought to haue had remedie nor health. It is more then twentie and eight yeres vnto this daie, that I haue goue wandryng by al these Indias, where are many thynges of those, whiche your worship doeth write of in your booke, and other thynges whiche hath not bee brought therether, for because the Phisitions that commeth to these partes, are no thyng curios. Thei bryng not their eye to the vniuersall wealthe, but to their owne particular, for thei come onely to enriche them selues, and for the moste parte thei bee ignorant people whiche dooeth passe to those Indias, thei dooe no esteme of the good whiche thei might dooe. And though that I haue no learnyng, I am affectioned to menne of learnyng, and so I am to your worshippe, for that I ynderstode of your booke

booke, and for the same that you haue in these partes, wh ch
is great, although I knowe you not, yet I was willyng to take
this paines whiche is a contentemente to me. You dooe write
in your booke, giuing knowledge of the *Bezaar* stone, and
doe giue the signes of the beastes whiche hath them: and be-
yng considered, we haue happened vpon a kinde beastes that
goeth in the mountaines of this Countrie, whiche are mucche
like to Shepe or Kiddes that your worshippe doeth speake of,
whiche are in the Indias of Portyngall, whiche dooeth in-
crease and hath these stones, of the whiche there are many in
this countrie, in the mountaines, and cold countries. Thei are
for the moste of a darke Red couller, thei are fed with health-
full Hearbes, where as be greate quantitie in the mountaines,
where these beastes doe feede: thei be very swifte, in so mucche
that thei can not bee hunted, but with the hande Gunne, thei
haue no hornes, and in that onely thei dooc differ from them
of the Easte India, for in all the reste thei are the same.

The 15. day of Iunc of this yere, of 1568. I and certaine gen-
tlemen my frendes went to the mountaines, to hunt, and wee
were in the huntyng fve dayes, and we killed some of those
beastes, which I haue spokē of. And as we went for this effect,
by thinking that thei were of the same kinde, of theim of the
East Indias. We caried youre Booke with vs, and we opened
one of them, whiche we hunted the greatest, and oldeſt wee
colde finde, and we founde no Stones in his Belly, nor in any
other parte of hym, nor any other thing. Wherby we did be-
lieue that they were not the same kinde of beastes, as those of
the East India. And we did aske of certaine Indians that went
to serue vs, where these beastes had their stones, and as they
are our enemies and would not that vve should knowve their
ſcrettes, they aunſuered vnto vs that they knevve nothing of
these stones, vntil one Boye vvhiche vvas amonget them be-
yng an Indian, of the age of twyelue yeres, he ſeyng that vve
vvere ſo desirous to knowve the ſame, did ſhewc vs the ſcret
of the cauſe, he did ſhewc vs vvhile the beaſt had the ſtones.

*How they
haue founde
the Bezaar
Stones.*

R. that

A Letter.

that vve had there dead, they vvere in a certaine little Purse
that the Mawe of the beast hath, vvhiche is vvhile the Herbes
that they doe feede are, vwhen they dooe retourne to chavve
their Cudde. And forthvvith the Indians vwoulde haue killed
the Boy, for the aduise that he had gauen vnto vs, because the
Indians doe esteeme muche of these stones, and they doe of-
fer them vnto their Goddes, or to their praiyng places wher
their Idols are, vnto vvhorn they doe offer the thinges that are
most precious. And so they doe offer these stones, as a thyng
of greate estimation, and also they doe offer, Gold, Siluer and
Precious stones, Beastes and Children. And aftervvarde vve
understoode that those Indians vvhiche vvent vwith vs had fa-
cificed the Boyc, vvhiche vwith our huntryng vve had forgot-
ten. And they caried hym avvay from vs by those Mountay-
nes, vvhile vve neuer more sawe hym, and it is a thing to con-
sider, that in all partes of the Indias, there hath not been found
any of these beastes, vntes it vvere in the high Hilles and Mou-
taynes, of this Realme of the Peru. For I haue gone ouer all
the Countries of Mexico, and by all the Prouinces and Real-
mes of the Peru, and Ilandes of Marenon, and by the Florida,
and by many other partes of our Occidentall Indias. And I
neuer sawe any of those beastes, but in these Mountaynes, of
the Peru. Syr, that I vwith all diligence of the vworld could ob-
say, i.e & knowv of Indians, beyng frendes, of the stones vvhich
they doe take out of those Beastes, is, that they are marueilos
good, against all venom, and against all sortes of Poyson, as
well in ineces as in any other sorte, and in the enties of the
harte, and to expell and kill wormes, and in woundes poyso-
ned, vvhiche are made with mortall hearbes, the whiche the
wilde Indian people doe vse. And the Poudre of this stonc put
into these Woundes, it is a greate remeedy, and so the Indians
doe say, that the stonc is against the hearbe, which is the mor-
tall hearbe, that they themselues dooe vse to kill oþre an other
withall, and also to kill vs. For they haue killed many of oure
Spaniardes therewith, diying inadde, with greate accidentes
without

without fyndyng or knowyng any remedie. It is true, that in Sublimatum some haue found remedy, by puttynge it into the Wounde. But if the Hearbe bee freshe and put newly to it, it profiteth little, and they die without remedie. We tooke out of the first beast which we killed, of that little Purse, wherunto he doth retурne to chaw e his Cudde when he lieth on the ground, nine stones, and it doth seeme that by reason the herbes whiche they doe feede vppon haue of so greate vertue. The Ioice of them going to that place by the order of nature, these stones are engendered, whiche haue so greate vertues. We opened oþers of them, that were dead, and in evry one of them vþe found stones, more or leſs, as they were of age, and it is to be noted, that these vþich doe feede in the high Hilles be those vþich doþ engender the stones that hath vertue. For they vþich doe feede in the plaine Countries, as they eate not, nor are maintained of the good hearbes of the high hilles, the stones that they haue, although that they haue some vertues, yet they are not so good as those vþich are fedde in the Mountains. We haue begon to vse of these stones conformatly to the order, vþich your vþorshippe dooe geue in youre booke, geuing the quantitie that you dooe commaunde, and for the deseases vþich you doe speake of, and we haue seen suche effectes in them, that haue made vs to maruell, and they haue healed suche deseases; that it is wunderfull to bee seen. Vnto the Ladie Kateren Dcuera, the Sister of the Lord President, and to the Ladie Mary de Ribera, and to Diego de Andrade, and to Diego Dela Isla, and to Mariana vþife to Master Ioba Plutido, and to the Father Iosephe Martines, and to the Father Diego Fernandes, Priestes, and to many others, these stones haue done greate profites, helping them of euill deseases, that it wþill bee to long to wriete of; it is iþfufficiente to say that they bee stones of greate vertues, and as a nevþ thyng they take it in pouder, all suche as haue deseases vþich can nouþ be healed by Medicine, and many doe heale! Wherefore God be praised that hath geuen to hem such vertues, whiche

R.ij. haue

A Letter.

haue beeene vsed since that I haue spoken of, whiche vvere the first that haue been discovered in the vworld for the vse to heale deseases, and vve doe trust that vwith them vwill be doen maruclous vworkes, according as they haue begon to doe them, all this is ovving to your vvorship. Seeyng that vwith your booke vve had knowledge to find them, & to discouer them, and to take them out of these beastes, whiche had them so hidden that surely there is much ovving to your vvorship, vwho hath discouered to vs so great a treasure, as this is, whiche is the greatest that vath been found in these partes, vwhereby our nation is mucho bound to you, and likevvise all the vworld, because all men shal profit of them, and of the rest of the secretes vwhich you haue put into your booke, tho whiche doth vnto vs greate profit, and in the recompence of the benefite vwhich I haue received, I doe fende to your vvorshippe a dozen of stones, by the vwaye of Ihon Antony Corso, the riche Marchaunte, if they come thither your vvorshippe may make experiance of them, in manye infirmities, for you shall finde greate effectes in them. By the same vwaye youre vvorship may aduise mee of the receipt of them, and anie thing that shall please you to commaunde mee I vwill dooe it, as one that is most affectioned to you, because you are curios, and leatned, and in doing somuche good to the vworld, and that as you haue vvritten and published. Herewith I doe sende you a small Chest, in the whiche goeth certaine Friesoles, that you maie commaunde to bee so vven in the beginning of Marche, that the colde doe not burne them, vwhich doth make a Plant like vnto Beanes, sumevhat lesse the whiche hath certaine vaines vhere the seede is, eatyn ghalfe a dozen of them vwith Salt to Thei beg of the taste of greene Beanes, they doe poure valiently, & thei doe evacuate the water of hym whiche hath the dropie, vwithout paines. The selfe same it doth if that they be drie, thei make them in Pouder, and take them vwith vvine, it is needfull that meate be made in a redines, if thei do vvorke to muche, by putting more then they shoulde do, vwith the moe any.

any thyng he contyneth, the woorke will cease.

Also I doo sende you an Hearbe, whiche dooeth growe in those plashe Countries, cloung to the grounde like vnto grasse, whiche is of greate vertues for many infirmities, chiefly for them whiche are greeued with Rehmes and Fleuries in the throte, it taketh them awaie easly with greate benefite, and for this, and in greeues of the heddle and Reumes chewyng it, thei doe diffeune very muche, thei call this hearbe of my name, because I doo yle it for the like euilles, for that an Indian did teache it me, whiche knewe muche of hearbes.

Also I doo sende your worship a fruite, whiche is of greate profit, and these Trees bee not founde in any countrie but in this countrie, thei are of the greatness of an Oke, of those in Spain, it hath many vertues for the rinde, beynge made in pouder, and caste into any soare, whiche is needfull to bee made clearie, it maketh of cane, and afterwarde maketh the fleshe to growe, and healeth it. And rubbing the teeth with this pouder, it maketh them cleane very well, and put upon the gummes, the fleshe beynge taken awaie, it doeth fleshe them, and the teeth whiche be lose, it maketh them faste. Seethyng the leaues of this Tree well in water, and washyng with the water any maner of swellyng, whiche hath any sore, or that it be darkned, it taketh away the swellyng, and impostume. And puttynge some small linen clothes, weare in this seethyng warme vpon the medicepe, whiche is put vpon the sore, or vpon the pouder that is made of the rinde, it maketh the soares to heale more quickly, mykyng that there come no humour to them. Of the said Tree comowth our a Rosine, whiche is swete sene, that doeth serue to perfume in many deseases, of the heddle, and to make plaisters for many euilles, and I doo sende it to your worshippe. Of the fruite the Indians dooeth make certaine drinke, which is for them verie healthfull, your worshippe maie commande to sowe theim, for I would bee glad that thei shold growe, for it will bee a thyng of muche

An hearbe
for the Rehu-
mes.

A fruite of a
tree of greate
vertues.

R.ij. delight

delight, for the profite that it dooeth in Phisickes, and for the noueltie of the Tree, for in all tyme it hath a very good smell. I brought to this countrey a blacke woman, whiche I bought in *Xerez de la Frontera*, and there did appere vpon her when she came hether certaine olde sores in her legges, whiche was of a long tyme, that she had them, and commynge to the Ile-lande of the *Margarita*, I being very sorrowfull for the sores whiche my blacke woman had, an Indian tolde me that he would heale her, and seyng that she had no other remedy, I deliuered her to the custodie of the Indian, that he might heale her for me, and imediately he tooke a fruite, whiche is common in that countrey, and all people in general dooeth eate it, which is of the greatnesse of an Orenge, and it hath a stonylike vnto a Peache. The whiche the Indian did burne, and made it into pouder, for the stony is harde, and can not bee grounde, without burnyng of it; and he caste the pouder of it into the sores, whiche she had with muche rotten fleshe, and very filthie, whiche with the pouder was made cleane and very well, and it tooke out all the rotten fleshe to the bone, and after it was cleane, with lint threedes and a little pouder put to it, she beganne to encrease newe fleshe, vntill thei were full of fleshe. And she healed verie well, and it is to bee considered that the little Carnell of the stony hath so much venom, and malice in it, that if anie persone or beaste doe eate it, he dieth forthwith without remedie, as though he had eate any maner of venom corisue, as *Sublimatum* or any other Poyson.

*A cure with
the sweat of
bloud.*

In the Towne of *Pofco* where I dwelt certayne yeres, there was an Indian which did cure the Indians and the Spaniardes of any maner of griefe or disease that they had, with anointing of the lointes and the partes whiche did greue them, with the ioyce of a certayne heare, and forthwith he did put them into manie Clothes, and thei did sweat at the ioyntes pure bloud. And also by the sick parte where he did put the ioyce, and as thei wente sweating he made cleane the bloud with a Linen clothe, vntill he perceived that thei had sweat sufficiencely

ly, and with this he healed many diseases that were incurable; And I am able to say, that many did thinke that thei had tourned young againe, and were more strong and young than thei were before. Thei sell sickle, & for al thinges that we did of giftes, and faire wordes, and fierce wordes, and threatninges, he would never tell vs what hearbe it was, nor shew it to any man in this countrie. There is found a kinde of Tree, that is of soft Timber, the Indians will make no sier of it, although you kill them. For that thei say, if anie of them dooe come neere to the fire that is made of this Tree, or gewing him the smooke of it, hee doth remaine impotent, for women. And thei haue this so certaine in their vnderstanding, and so verisified, that you shall not make them to put them selues by the fire, that is made of the Tree, for any thing of the world, for thei are so carnall that thei will none of this.

Thei doe heale in these countries any swellinges which are in the feete or legges, caused of colde humors, with an herbe whiche is called *Centella*, and being stamped and put to the swellinge there doth arise certaine Blisters, by the which there doth come foorth greate quantitie of water and humors, vntill it leue the Foote, or the legge drie. I haue seen greate ex-
perience by these evacuations, amongel the Indians, for thei use them much, and I haue seen some Spaniardes use of it, and heale of the like diseases.

In the yere of 1568, in the Province of Chile, thei did cut of from certaine Indians beynge Prisoners, the calues of their legges, for to eate them, and thei did roste them for that purpose, & that whiche is of more admiration, Thei did put vnto the place where they were cut of, leaues of certaine hearbes, and there came not out a droppe of bloud, and many did see it. And this was dooen in the Cite of Saint James, in the presence of the Lorde Don Garcia de Mendoza, whiche was a thing that did make all men maruell at.

There are to bee found here verie fewe Hearbes and Trees like vnto those of Spaine, for that the earth dooth not beare them,

*Centella, an
hearbe for
the swelling
of the feete
or legges.*

them, in the newe Spaine there are more of them then in any other part of the Indias. For when it was equired, thei found many Trees and many Hearbes, and Plantes like vnto those of Castile, and birdes and beastes likewise. Wha haue here Snakes which doe put admiration to suche as dooc see them, for thei be as grete as men, whiche are most taue, and doe no hurt. Here are Spiders as great as Ortinges, and very venomous. It raineth Todes as great as those of Spaine, the whiche the Indians dooc eat rosted, for thei are a kinde of people whiche eate all kinde of venomous beastes. There bee so many buy, tres, whiche doe breede in many llandes, that you haue in the Sea, neere to the lande, that they eate vp the Cattle, and suche nouinbers of them that it is wonderfull; and as the keepers of them be blacke thei care little for them. One thing doth make mee maruaile, that the kine whiche are breade in the Moun- taines, being brought to the plaine ground thei die all. I sawe a frende of mine that brought 300. Kine to be weayed, and they did with hold a tyme that they were not waied, and by little and little, in one Moneth there remained not one, but all died. And that whiche is more to be maruiled at, is, that they died all trembling, and consumed. Some there be that doe attribute it, that the mountaines being a country most cold, and that it raineth every daie in theim, and in the plain countrie it lacketh the raine, and is hote, and as they moue fro one extremitie to an other they die; that truelie it is a thing worthy of consideration, to see that in the space of eight Leagues, little more or lesse, whiche you haue of plaine grounde from the coast to the mountaine, by a long vale more then one thou- sande Leagues, and never more Rained in them, and in the Mountaignes it Raineth euery daie.

*Against the
herbe which
the Indians
doe use.*

Your worship shall vnderstande that the eight daie of Oc- tober of this yere, here came hether a Cosine of mine, which is called *Alonso Garcia*, a good Souldiour, and saith vnto vs that he hath found an hearbe whiche is against the venomous Hearbe that the wild people doe use. Whiche hearbe doth kill
men
without

without remedy, the whiche these valiaunt people of the Indias dooe sic in their wares, And houses those that dooeth dwell from the Charcas vnto Chile, and dooeth liue like vnto wilde people, maintaining the selues onely by hunting, and fleshe of mankinde, And thei haue killed with their arrowes whiche are put with these venomous Hearbes, an infinite number of Spaniardes, whiche thei saie bee not good to eate, and that their fleshe is harde, and so when thei kil them, thei kepe to waxe feder, three daies or fower daies. And with this herbe that is now founde, the hurte shall bee muchie remedied, that thei doo make. But our people dooe not muche feare of theim, but the Hearbe whiche thei shoothe withall in suche sorte, that it maketh theim to dye by madnesse, without any remedie. And now with the recouter Hearbe that thei haue founde thei are all glad. Thei saie that it is an Hearbe whiche carrieth very brode leaues, whiche is like to the leaues of Lanten of Spaine: and beyng beaten and putte to the wound, that is poysoned, it killeth the venome, and immediatly it taketh awaie the accidentes, whiche the venome of the Hearbe doeth make. Thei doe take it for a greate matter in that countrey, that thei haue founde suche a remedy. And you shall vnderstante that the counter Hearbe was founde in the same countrey, where the Hearbe of poysone is: and I thinke it bee also in other partes, but there where the hurt is doen, our lordes will was, to discouer the remedy.

I doe write your worshippe thei thynges, whereby with theim ye maie consider, how many more Hearbes and Plates of greate vertues like to those, this our Indias hath, the which we do not rech vnto, nor know, for as the Indias are a naughtie kinde of people, & our enemies, thei will not discouer one secrete, nor one vertue of one Hearbe, although that thei should see vs dye, and although you should plucke theim in peeces: for if wee dooe knowe any thyng of this, whiche I haue spoken of, and of others thei are knownen of the Indians, as thei bee accompanied with Spaniardes, thei dooe discouer

S.j. it

A Letter.

it to theim, and saith all that thei knowe, I will enlarge no more, for because I knowe not if this letter shall come to the handes of your worshippe, and if it come to your handes, and that it please you to aduertise me, I will write you larger, and more particularites of this coutrie, and of the vertue of other Hearbes, and Beastes, &c of other thynges, the whiche I knowe that thei will glie contentmente to your worshippe, seyng that you are so curios to knowe these thynges, our

Lorde. From Lyma in the Peru the xvi. daie

of December, in the yere of our

Lorde. 1568. I dockisse the

handes of your

worship.

Peter de Osma, and of

Xara, and Zejo.

che





He gentleman of the Peru, which
wrote to me this letter althoough
I know hym not, it seemeth that
he is a man curious, and affectio-
ned to the like thinges, and I
hauie him in great estimatiō. For
because that the office of a Souldiour
is to handle weapons, and
to shēd bloud, and to doe other
exercises aperiayng to Souldiours. He is muche to bee
esteemed, that he will enquire and searche out herbes, and
Plantes, and to knowe their properties, and vertue, in
the which he semeth to be likened, to Dioscorides, who went
exercyng the weapons in the Hostes of Antony and Cleo-
patra, and whether soever he went, he did sēke these herbes,
Trees, Plantes, Beastes and Mineralles, and many other
thinges, of the whiche he made those sixe booke, whiche
are so celebratyd in all the worlde, whereby he gat the glo-
ry and fame, whiche we see he hath, and therē hath remained
more fame of hym, by writing them, then althoough he had
gotten many Cities with his warlike aces. And therfore
I doe esteeme muche of this Gentlemanne, for the labour
whiche he taketh, in knowyng and enquiryng, of these na-
turall thinges. And I doe owe much unto him, for the good
opinion whiche he hath of mee, and for that he hath sent
mee, For surely it is to be taken in every good parte, I wil
prouoke hym by writing hym againe, to sende vs more
thinges, For that it is a grete thing to knowe the secre-
tes and marauiles of nature, of the Herbes which he hath
sent mee, I will make experiance of them, and I will know
their vertues and pōeration, the fōrness we will lowe at
their time, the Bezaer stones doosome to be different from
those that are brought from the Oriental Indias. In their
vicer shewe they be darke Tawnes, and glistering, vnder-
neath two Shires or Capes: He hath a white coulour,

S. i.

whiche

The com-
mēdation of
hym that
wrote this
Letter.

The second part of the thynges that

whiche beeynge tasted and vsed betweene the teeth is pure Earth, it hath neither favour nor taste, rather it doth coole then heate, they be ordinary as great as Beanes, or bigger. For the most part there are bothe great and little, and it seemeth well by theim that they haue medicinal vertues, many persones doe bring them, whiche are notable come in this Fleete, whiche come to mee as though that I were the first discouerer of them. They doe declare maruellous effectes of them, that it seemeth wonuers: I drake one and I gaue it made in powder, to a boye, whiche was fated that venom had been geuen to hym, I can not tell whether any other benefites doseen unto hym or that healed hym, but hee was well healed, I will vsse of it in other infirmities, and what I finde of their operation, and the rest of the medecines, with that whiche shall be newly knownen I will shewe it, in the other chirche volume, the whiche I will make of this Medicinall Historie, in the whiche shall bee thinges maruellous, and greete secretees of Phisiche, that shall gue conuentacion to all men, and muche more to the sick, that shall be healed with them. Of one thing you muste be aduertised, that whiche is here written, part of it we haue learned of theym that haue come from those partes, and brought knowledge of theim, and partes is attributed to their complexion, and qualitie, what they maye doone, and partes we haue experemented, and in all haue you consideration, that all these thinges whiche are brought from our Indias, be for the moste parte hot, and that you vsse of them under this qualitie, in that wherin they shall bee needfull. For that it is well that they be aduertised of this, that so muche doth import to knowe it.

¶ The

they bryng from the *West Indias.*

Fol. 71.

The Dragon.



The second part of the thynges that

Of that
whiche hath
been brought
frō the newe
Spaine, in
the twoo
Fleates whi-
che now hath
come, and al-
so from the
firme lande.
The Bishop
of Cartage-
na.

Of the bloud
of Drago
and of his
fruite.

Varietie of
the auncient
writers a-
bout the
bloud of
Drago.



After I had written the aforesaid, the two fletes came, the one from the firme Lande, and the other from the newe Spaine, and in that of the firme Lande came the Bisshoppe of Cartagena, a man most religious, and learned, and verie curious in these thinges, who sought mee sooz the with, when hee was come, for because he was affectioned to the booke we made, of this discourse. I went to visite him, and speykynge many thinges of Hearbes, and Plantes, whiche be in his Dioces, we came to crete of the bloud of Drago, whiche is taken out very fine, and in all persecution, in that countrie, and he saide vnto mee: I doe bring the fruite of the Tree where they dooe take out the bloudde of Drago, whiche is a marueilous thyng to see, for that it is of the likenes of a Beast I was desirous to see it, and we opened a leafe where the seede was, and the leafe being opened, there did appere a Dragon, made with so muche arte, that he did seeme as though that he had been a lieue, hauyng a long necke, the Mouth oppen, the Bristelles standyng vp like thoynes, the Tayle long and standyng vpon his feete, that surely there is no man whiche shall see hym that will not maruell to see his Figure, made with so muche arte, that it seemeth made in Iuoy, and that no craftes man so perfite could make it better, in seeyng that whiche I sawe, there did represent to mee so many opinions, and so diuers iudgements, as the auncient writers had, as well Greckes, Latinistes, and Arabies, touching the same, speykynge a thousande desperat saiynges, because that thei would come to y right knowledge to instruct vs, wherefore it was called the bloud of Drago. One soȝt saiyng that it is saide that a Dragon hauyng his thoate cutte, the bloud is gathered, and is confectioned with certain thynges, and for this it is called the bloud of Drago. Others did late that it is the bloud of an Elephāte, strangled, with other thinges, others

others that it is a kinde of red Oker, others that it is the
joyce of Cideritis. An Hearbe very little, and his Joyce ve-
ry grene, others that it is the joyce of the roote of an herbe
which is called Dracontio. And for this thei call it the bloud
of Drago: this doe the auncient writers saie, and many other
vanities whiche are large to write.

The new writers folowyng the same ignorance as they
are wnonce to doe in thinges which be doubtful, because the
duty of him that is doubtfull, is to say nothing a newe, vn-
leise it bee in that whiche is cleare and manifeste. For in
the doubtful and harde thinges they leauie it as they finde
it, all they did varie one from an other, as the auncient wri-
ter did, but the tyme whiche is the discouerer of all thinges
hath discouered vnto vs, and taught vs, that it is the bloud
of Drago. And for that it is so called, is for the fruite of the
Tree, whiche doth cast from it a drapp, after the maner of
bloud, the which is the fruite that we haue spoken of, which
is a formed Dragon in shape as nature would bring forth,
whereby he tooke verie plainly the name of the Tree. For
it is a common thynge, that Trees haue the name of their
fruities, by the whiche this marueilous Tree doth receiue
his name. And seyng the fruite he caried was made so par-
tice a Dragon, he tooke from vs so many doubtes, and con-
fusions as we see the olde writers did write of, and the late
writers also. And from henceforwarde we shall be certiffied
that it is the bloud of Drago: seeing that his fruite doeth
give his name to the Tree, and to the Gumine, and to the
drooping that commeth out, whiche is brought most excel-
lent from Cartagena, and is made by incision, geuing cer-
taine cuttes in the same Tree. And beynge a tree of muche
greatnes, it hath the Rinde verie thinn, that with any ma-
ner of thing it is opened, and likewise there is other made,
but it is not made so good, but after the maner as the Tur-
pentine is made, in Castile. For that it is sold in Loaves,
and the one is called the bloud of Drago, of the drappes, and
the

*It is called
the bloud of
Drago for
the fruite
whiche is a
Dragon.*

The second part of the thynges that

the other the bloud of Drago in Bread.

*The vertue
of the bloud
of Drago.*

The one, and the other, hath vertue to retaine any manner of fluxe of the heallie, put upon the heallie, or giuen in Glisteres, or taken by the mouthe. Spade pouder, it dooreth staine the running of the head, to the lower partes applied. In any manner of fluxe of blood, it doeth recaine and stanche it. And doeth sover and glewe woundes together, whiche be freshe and newe made. It doeth lette that the teech fall not out, and it maketh the fleshe to growe on the bare gummes. It is a merueilous couller for Painteres. And without this, it hath many other vertues. I doe thinke to some some of the seede, to see if it will growe in these partes. It is thought that the bloud of Drago is temperate, with litle heate.

*It is tempe-
rate.*

*Gumme for
to poure
them whiche
hauet the
Goute.*

There was a gumme giuen unto me, whiche thei byng from the firme lande of the Peru, wherwith thei doe purge them, whiche hath the Goute in those partes, thei put of it as muche as a Nutte in distilled water, and thei let it stand all the night in steepe, and in the morngyn thei straine and byng it, and thei take that water, whiche shoulde bee the quantite of twoo ounces: and the pacient muste bee without meate, till the middest of the daie, and there with thei dooe poure the humour, whiche doeth cause the Goute. I sawe a gentleman who came in this laste Fleace did use it, The whiche he byngeth for remedie of this cuill, who was full of the Goute, and with byng this evaucation, he doeth finde hym self well, and the Goute doeth not come to hym, as it was wont to dose, for that it came to hym verie cruelly, and ofteyn unto me he gaue as muche as a small Nutte (and he would give me no more: and I gaue it in the oder as it is saied, to one whiche had the Goute, and he made three stooles with it. I knowe not what it will bee, it were nedefull to haue more quantite, for to proceede forwarde: but it will bee brought hereth by others, as thei haue doen many other thynges. It hath a good taste in the takyng

takynge, for that it hath neither smell nor sounour, it maketh his woode without paines. It is herte, as my opinion is, in the fyrste degree. I knowe not what maner of thyng the Tree is, where ther doove take it out, for he whiche dooeth hyng it, kowleth not.

The Armadilio.

notas



His beaste I tooke out of an other naturallye made, whiche was in the Countynge house of Gonsalo de Molina, a gentleman of this Citie, in the whiche there are greate quanticie of booke of diuers authours, and the fashion and forme of many kinde of Beastes, and Birdes, and other curious thynges, brought from the Orientall Indias, as from the Occidental, and from other partes of the worlde. And greate varietie of monies, and stones of antiquitie, and differences of armes whiche with greate curiositie, and with a noble mynde, he hath caused to be brought.

T.J.

Thei

The second part of the thinges that

*The History
of the Ar-
madillo a
beast.*

Thei dooe bryng also from the firme lande a bone, the whiche is of the taile of a straunge beaste, whiche is all couered ouer with small shelles, even vnto the feete, like as a Horsc is couered with armour: where by he is called the *Armadillo*, that is to saie a beaste armed. He is of the greatnesse of a younge Pigge, and in the snoute he is like vnto hym, he hath a greate and long taile like to a Lizard. He abideth or dwelleth in the yearth, as a Mole doeth, and thei saie that he is maintained thereof, for abroade out of the yearth, thei see hym not eate any thyng.

*He hath the
virtue in
the bone of
the tale.*

He hath his vertue onely in the bone of his taile, the whiche beeyng made small powder, and takynge so muche thereof, as the hedde of a greace pinne, made in little baules, puttynge it into the eare, hauyng greef therin, it takecheth it awaie marueilously, also if there be any noisse or soundynge in the hedde, with any deafnesse, it doeth a greate effecte in many persones that hath vsed it, and thei haue healed therwith. And the Lo: Bishopp: did certifie me, that he had seen it doen many tymes, with greate admiration, that it is a thyng to be marueilid at. And with suche vertues in a place so hidden. There be of these beastes in the India of Portingall, thei bee called armed beastes, for that thei are as I haue saied armed with scales and shelles.

*Stones of
the Cay-
mades.*

There is brought from the Countries of *Nombre de Dios*, and *Cartagena*, and from other partes of the firme lande, certaine stones, whiche be purc pimble stones, of a brooke or riuier, the whiche are founde in greate quantitie in the mawes of *Caimanes*, þ are called *Lagartos*, which are a kinde of beastes very greate, and dooeth inhabite in the lande, and in the sea, from whence thei goe to the lande, and take out their yōglynge, as the *Tortugas* of the sea doeth: thei are furious beastes with a greate number of teeth, and with so greate a mouthe, that thei dooe swallowe doun a whole Indian. Thei doe inhabite ordinarily in little brookes of greate riuers, and some of theim in the Sea, at the entrie

entrie thereof. Thei are of a marueilous greatnesse, there be some of them whiche are in length two and thirtie foote thei kill them with fishe hookes, for with a handgunne it is very difficulte, for because of the harde skinne whiche he hath: thet lye alwates with their mouthes open. There is founde in theire malues, when that thei dooe kill theim, the quanticie of a greate basket full of smothe stones, and it is not knownen for what effecte thei doe eate them, whether it be to haue their mawe or stomache occupied, or for ballest as a shippe hath. The Indians doeth kepe these stones, and the Spaniardes also: soz such as hath Quarternie argues: for puttynge twoo stones of theim vpon the twoo temples of the hedde, the Quarternie Ague is taken awaie, or the heate is notably lightned, and of this thei haue experiece: in those partes, and in the Shippes where one came, who gaue me twoo of them saied, that he put them to a boye, beng a little page of a Shippes, who had the quarterne Ague, and it was taken awaie, goyng forwarde lightnyng hym self three or fower fittes, that the stones were puttē to hym. I haue experimeted it, and haue put it twoo tymes to a little girle, that hath the quarterne ague, and it semeth that she feeleth not so muche heate, when she hath them put to her, but thet haue not taken awaie the Quarternie, hauyng put theim twoo tymes to her, I knowe not what it will be from hence forward.

In all the Seas of the Indias: in the mosse of theim, there be certaine Fishes very greate, whiche as are called *Tiburones*, or *Dogge Fishes*: whiche are very strong, and rauenyng, thei fight with the Zeales in the Sea: and thei are feare in their woorkes, and aspectes. These thei dooe fishe with greate fishe hookes, thei bryng them to the lande or hoise them into the Shippes, and thei cutte them in pieces. In the heddes of theim, whiche are very greate, there is founde certain stones, of a white couller, of muche greatnesse, three or fower, or more: and some of theim of moze

T,ij. waighe

Tiburones
hath stones
in the head.

The second part of the thynges that

*For the grief
of the stone
in the Kid-
ness.*

waight then twoo pounde: holowe in some partes, and be-
rie white: thei are somewhat heaute. Of these stones thei
haue in the Indias greater experiance: giuyng theim made
in pouder, vnto those that doeth suffer the greefe of the stome
in the Kidneys, and to them that can not passe, and to theim
that can not caste out the stome of the Raines, and of the
Bladder, beyng of the greatnesse that he maie not passe
out. This is a thyng emongest the Indians very plaine,
and knownen: and likewise emongest the Spaniardes,
whiche doe dwell in those partes: and thei which doe come
hither doe saie it plainly, and doe affirme it to be so. I haue
tasted it, and it semeth a thyng vsuauerie, & I haue not pro-
ued it, nor applied vntill now, in tyme it shall bee doen, and
we will giue reason thereof.

*Turpentine
of Cartage-
na.*

They doe byng from the newe Kingdome and from the
prouince of Cartagena, a certaine Turpentine, very cleare,
and of sweete smell, much better then that they call *de Vene*,
whiche they byng from Venis, it hath all the vertues that
the good Turpentine hath, and it doeth the selfe same effe-
ctes, and better, and with great efficacie and redines.

*Better then
ours.*

Here hath been vsed of it in woundes, and it is a thyng
marueilous. The good worke whiche it doth, especially in
wounds of Joyntes and Denowes, and of Legges, of that
I haue seene greate warkes doen with it. And it doth mun-
difie beyng mingled with other thynges, all kinde of olde
Soares, and it is an excellente thing, washed, and prepared
for the Faces of Ladies whiche haue neede of it.

*Carana of
Cartagena.*

Thei doore byng from the selfe same partes *Carana*, of
Cartagena, purifid so cleare that it is like to Cristall, and
surely it is better, and it is applied muche better then that
whiche hecherunto hath come, and doth better his effectes,
and warkes, and is of a moze sweete smell and maketh bet-
ter his operation.

The

they bryng from the VVest Indias.

Fol. 75.

The Flower of Mechoacan.



Any persones of theym whiche
came nowe in this flete from
the firme Lande, brought verie
good Mechoacan, better then
that of the newe Spaine, gath-
ered in the Coaste of Nicaragua,
and in Quito, after the Mechoa-
can was discouered, in the newe
Spaine, they haue founde the
selfe same Hearbe and Roote in chole partes whiche I doe
speak of. And they dose vse it to pourge, and it doeth mar-
ueilous woorkes, and they doe vse it in chole countries and
in al the firme land, as they did vse that whiche was brought
from the newe Spaine, with marueilous successe.

From the Cape of Haint Elen, whiche is in the same
Coste, they dooe bring a nother Mechoacan, but it is very
strong, and being taken it maketh greate accidentes of bo-
mites and faintnesse, with many stooles, and for this they
callit Escamones, and no man daeth vse it because it maketh
the accidentes as is saied. It doeth carie a Leafe as the

T. iij.

Mechoacan.

Mechoacan
of the firme
Lande.

Furions
Mechoacan.

The second part of the thinges that

Mechoacan it self doeth, although sumwhat lesse, and doeth mingle it selfe and runne vpp by whatsoeuer it commeth vnto. And it carrieth a lesser Roote with some sharpenesse of taste, whereby it is manifestly seen how muche disputation doth serue for the purpose, of the place where it groweth. Wherby that this Roote may make the woorke more or lesse.

*And so I doe belue that the first *Mechoacan* that came to these partes, was gathered out of a good place, and that whiche they doe nowe bring, they shoud gather it out of other places more moist, whiche doth take away from it the vertue and woorke. They doe sowe it howe in the Coaste of the firme lande in their Gardaines and Orchardes, they do make *Conserua* of the Roote, in many maner of waies, for the taste is sweete, and it may be eaten for daintinesse. And as the Roote is without taste, it taketh the Suger very well, in what maner of sorte soeuer it bee confited or doen.*

*Conserua
of Mechoa-
can.*

*The descrip-
tion of Me-
choacan.*

*Whereth thei doe bring the fruite and the flower, as whole as it is in the Plant, and the leaues and bowes. The flower is like to flower of *Oringe* Trees, of fwe Leaues, sumwhat greater they be, in coulour *Tawny*, they doe caste in the middest a blister, of the greatnesse of a Nut, with a little baine, small and somwhat white in couler, the whiche is deuided into twoo partes, with an other little baine, verie thinne, and in euerie parte it hath twoo graines, like to *Pearson*, verie little, and when they be drye they bee blacke. There is not in the taste of them any sauour, whiche beyng sownen in a softe moist ground they doe growe verie well. And it is an hearbe worthy to be seen: for that he doth run vp, ioinyng to any maner of thing that he doth leane to. He beareth his Leafe all the yere long, the rest of his woorke and the maner of the taking of the Roote wee haue spoken of in the first parte, where you may see it. Whosoever will vse of it, there is made of it *Conserua*, as of *Harmulade*, couered with *Sirupe*, and made after the maner of a Gelly of*

they bryng from the *West Indias.*

Fol. 76.

of his Joyce and Sugur. And in all sortes it doeth purge
gently without molestation.

The fruite of Balsamo.



In the first parte speakyng of the Balsamo, we saied howe it shoulde bee made twoo maner of waies, the one by incision, and of this there cometh litle of it to these partes. And the other is by detraction, and this is that whiche commeth so muche to Spaine.

That whiche is made by incision doth not come to this Countreis, for it is a thyng very hard or difficult to make, and to geather. Now in these shippes whiche come from the firme lande, there doth come a good quantitie of Balsamo, made by incision, and is made of trees such as are in the newe Spaine, whereof the Balsamo is made, whiche is made by seechyng. The whiche is a Tree verie greate that doth carie many Bowes, from his firste growyng, whiche doe come forthe of the same Tree, and it hath twoo Rindes, one of them grosse as of a Coxke Tree, and the other thinne, cleauyng to the inner part of the tree. Betweene these twoo Rindes the Balsamo is taken out,

Of Balsamo
made by inci-
sion.

The descrip-
tion of the
Tree of the
Balsamo.

made

The second part of the thynges that

made by incision, the whiche commeth forth like to a white
Teare or drop, most cleare, with a marueilous sweete smel,
that doeth shew well his marueilous effectes, and Medicin-
nall vertues that it hath, of the whiche we have treated in
the first parte. And that *Balsamo* which is made by seching
as we doe there shewe, we see the marueilous effectes that
it doth, with so greate and marueilous woorkes, that it doth
put admiration to the whole worlde, and many other mar-
uailes whiche hetherunto we have seen, that be there spo-
ken of. And greater will these woorkes bee that shall bee
dooen, with the *Balsamo* that they now byng, made by
incision: seyng that one drapppe of this is more woorthe
then twoo Gallens of the other, as it is manifestly seen by
using of it.

*The Balsamo of the In-
dias that is
made by in-
cision, is bet-
ter then that
which was
in Egipt.*

And surely that which was in Egipt, and did faill so ma-
ny numbers of yeres past, I doe beleue that had not moare
vertues then this. And am sure that this is of greater ver-
tue and effectes then that was of. I haue the fruite of this
Tree, whiche is little accordyng to the greatnesse of the
Tree, and it is a graine as great as a white Pease, the taste
of it is a little bitter, he is shut into the ende of a little Cod
of the length of a finger, beyng narrow, white, and thinne,
of the thiknesse of vj. d. He carieth no more but one graine
in the ende, whiche is the fruite that the Indianes doe vse,
to perfume them withal, in grieses of the head, and in Reu-
mes. Surely the *Balsamo* is a marueilous thing, and it
sheweth well in it what it is, accordyng to his woorkes.

*In grieses of
the head.*

*Turpentine
or Oyle of
Deabero.*

They doe byng from the firme lande a Turpentine, or
Licor, whiche is called *Deabero*, and it is gathered of cer-
taine Trees of mixture, they be not Pine Trees, nor Cipres,
they be heigher then our Pine Trees, they are as straight
as Cipresses Trees. In the highest part of the Tree doth
byng forth certaine bladders of twoo sortes, the which are
greate and small, and beyng broken, there doth come forth
of them a marueilous licour, whiche falleth drapppe after
drapppe,

droppe, and so the Indians doe gather them with greate deliberation, and they doe put the same droppes whiche bee in the Bladder into a shell, and alwaies haue shelles vnder the bladders, where it doth distill through, and it is a thing doen with suche leasure, that many Indians doe gather verie little all the daie.

The Lico^o doth serue for all that the *Balsamo* doth, it healeth verie well woundes, it taketh awaie colde grieses, and windie. Some doe take it for the grieses of the stomacke, caused of colde humors, or for windines, with a little white Wine. And it is to be vnderstoode, that the *Balsamo* which is made by scachyng, or that whiche is made by incision, and this or any other maner of Lico^o of these of the Indias, whiche is to be taken by the mouche, there muste bee taken but little quātitie of it, for it must not be more then foure or fife droppes, and it must not bee taken in the Palme of the hande as it is saied, but puttynge a little Wine or Rose wa^ter into a Spoune, and vpon that the droppes of *Balsamo*, and putt the spone well into your mouche, and let it fall that it touche not in the tongue. For taken with it or touchyng in it, the sauour and taste is not taken away in a long time, and it maketh suche an euell taste, in suche

sorte: that for this onely cause many doe abhorre it, and doe not take it, and to others it hath taken away the luste of their meate, with takyng of it, touchyng it with the tongue.

V.j. Long

The vertue
that it bath.

Note.

The second parte of the thynges that

Long Peper.



Long Peper.



Also they doe bring from Cartagena, and from the coaste of the Armie lande, from Nata nere to Veraga, a certayne kinde of Peper, whiche they call long Peper, which hath a sharper taste, then the Peper whiche is brought from the Orien-tall Indias, and it doeth bite more then it, and it is of more sweete taste and of better smell, then that of Asia, or the Peper of the East India, it is a gentle spice, for to dresse meates withall, and for this effect all the people in that contrie doe use it.

A Gentleman gaue me a platter full of it, for he brought muche quantite of it for the seruice of his Rechin, because they

Histerie.

they vse it in place of blacke Peper, and they take it to bee of a better taste, and more healthfull. I haue tasted it, and it bitech more then the blacke Peper doth, and it hath a more sweete taste then it. I haue caused it to bee put in to dresse meates, in place of the Orientall Peper, and it geueth a gentle taste vnto that as is dresse therewith.

It is a fruite that doeth caste out a high plante, of the greatnessse of a grosse Packe thredes, and the lower parte nere to the roote, is as great as a little sticke, that is very small: and vpon it are ioyned the little graines, very nere together; as though thei were mesled one with the other. Whiche makeh the greatnessse as is said: and beinge broken awaie frō the little sticke, the little sticke remaineth bare, and whole: and it is greene beyng freshe, the Sunne doeth ripen it, and doeth turne it blacke, and so thei doe bryng it to these partes. It is in the coast of the firme lande in *Nata* and in *Cartagena*, and in the newe kyngdome: in all these partes thei doe vse it, as I haue said. It hath the Medicinall vertues, whiche the Orientall Peper hath that wee vse. His complexion is hotte in the third degree.

And going to visite a child, the Soonne of this gentleman, whiche gaue me this Peper, beeynge released of the fire in the face, I commaunded hym to bee let blood, and to his face thei should put lome little clothe with Rose water, and the hearbe *Mora*: he said to me that he liked the let-tyng of blood well, because the boye was of *Sanguine* complexion, but that whiche he shold put to his face, he had wherewith to heale it in shorte tyme: and he commaunded to be broughte foxhe, a chyng like unto a cake, as great as a meane platter, the outiside was blacke, and within yea-
lowe, and beeynge brought well nere two thousande Lea-
ges, it was moiste, and he did dissolve a litle of it with rose
water, and putte it to the boyes face: I was desirous to
knowe of what it was, and he said when the worke is seen
what iadoeth, he would tell me whereneft it was compoun-

*The maner
of it.*

Historie.

Cl. 15. vob.

The second parte of the thynges that

ded. The next daie I did returne to the sick, and he had his face so amended, that I did maruell, and imediately he was washed with Rose water, a little warme, and he remained as though he had not had any euill.

*Of what it
was made.*

The cake was made of certaine Wormes, whiche the Indians doeth take out of the grounde, and thei doe make them fatte, giuyng theim to eat leaues of a certaine kinde of corne, that thei haue there called *Maiz*, and after thei are fatte, thei putte theim into a frysing panne of yearth, and dooeth seeth theim therin, and as thei goe skrommyng of the skumme, thei straine it, and doe retourne to seeth it, vntill it be chicker then oyntement, after the fashion and maner as he had it there.

*Rootes a-
gainst veno-
mos thinges.*

Thei doe byynge from the *Charcas* certaine Rootes, that bee like to the rooces of flower *de Lewis*, sauyng that thei are more small, and thei doe smell muche like to the leaues of a Figge Tree: thei doe call these rooces in the Indias, a remeuy against the venemous Pearbe, for beynge made powder, and taken with white Wine, it is a thyng of mooste strengthe, and of the greatest vertue, that is there agaist venome, of what maner or qualitie so euer it bee, so that it bee not coxine as *Sublimatum*, or the like: for that those kinde of poysone, with onely drynkyng of muche Milke be remedied.

*Milke a-
gainst poysone*

This roote beynge taken, it dooeth make the venome to bee caste out, whiche is eaten or dronken, or of any maner of venemous humour, or of any euill degree, or cause of it, whiche is as well doen by vomite, as by sweate, if there be any small Wormes, or longe Wormes in the boode, it killeth them, and expelleth the: and if you haue any suspition, that there haue been giuen you any venemous mortall, or that it bee venome or whiche crafft, it doeth expell it out, of the whiche there is so muche cruff in those partes, that thei haue it for a maruellous remeedy, for the thynges that is fated. The roote beynge raw, it hath a sweete taste, with some

some sharpenesse. It semeth hotte in the seconde degree.

From the coaste of *Nicaraga*, and of *Nata*, thei whiche doe come in these last shippes, from the firme Lande, doeth bryng a certaine kinde of purge, that surely by the taste is easie to bee taken, and it woorketh well, and without any paine, it doeth principally purge Choller. It is a fruite of a Tree very greate, after the maner of *Chozinise Chestnuttes*: whiche hath within theim the Chestnuttes, sauyng that theipicke not but bee plaine: in those prickelles there bee some like to Chestnuttes, made cleane without hale, well nere square, whiche dooerh deuide theim selues, by meanes of a little skinne, every one into twoo partes, and so thei are couered with it, and when thei be taken and occupied, that little skinne is takē awaie, and is made cleane from it, for that bryng taken with it, it makerh most greate accidentes, and homicides, and muche fainenesse, and infinite stooles: and without it the Chestnutte is a purgation verie gentle, and thei dooe purge easely, and without paines: if thei bee costed, then thei will purge lesse, if thei bee greene thei eate theim, or bēyng beaten in a Morter, thei take theim with Wine or with the broche of a Henne: if thei bee drye, thei make pouder of theim, any maner offashion, thei doe make their woork well: and with muche asfuraunce kepyng the order that ought to be kepee, by them whiche bee purged, and the humoures prepared for it, whiche is conueniente. Thei are hotte in the first degree.

¶ Of the Sarcaparilla of Guaiquil.



¶ The firste parcke wee saied, how that thei brought Sarcaparilla from Peru: whiche wee dooe vse to some persones, and it doeth greate effectes, and because that it was little, and sone doen, we returned to that of the Honduras, whiche is that we haue spent heher vpto. And

¶ U.iiij. now

¶ Of the Sar-
caperilla of
Guaiquil.

The second parte of the thynges that

now thei bryng it not onely from the *Peru*, but also from the Province of *Quito*, and from all that coste: and the best and that whiche doeth greatest effectes, is that whiche thei bryng from *Guayaquill*, from whence that was, whiche I have declared. That thei brought, and that now thei bring, although but little, for that thei bryng it so farre, as from the *Peru*.

*Where it
groweth.*

This *Sarcaparilla*, doeth growe at the side of a Riuier, whiche commeth from the Mountaines of the *Peru*, which is neare to a place that is called *Chimbo*, and the Indians of that place dooeth call it *Moyca*: it is a Riuier in the whiche runneth muche water, and sometymes it commeth with great increase of waters: and filleth all the Valleys neare vnto it of this water, thei call it *Guaiacuill*. For that in the plaine countreys, it passed by a place that is called *Sainte James* of *Guaiacuill*, and runneth from the East vnto the West, and it goeth entryng into the *Sea*, by a place ioyning to the old port, by the paase that thei call *Guainacana*, in the bankes of this Riuier, there groweth greate quantite of *Sarcaparilla*: and also in the Valleys of that Province, and that whiche groweth in the bankes, is watered with the riuier, and that likewise in the valleyes, whiche are neare to it, with the comyng doun of the freshes, and the water wher thei come of the increase of muche water. Thei doe call the Indians of those partes *Guancanicas*, where they haue a custome to take out their Teeth by the waie of Sacrifice, and doe offer them to their Idolles, for they say that they should offer the beste thinge that a man hath, and that in man they finde not a better thinge, nor more necessarie then the Teeth.

*A straunge
custome of
Indians.*

*The Riuier
of Guaiquil
a marne-
lous water.*

This Riuier whiche is called *Guaiquil* haue greate vertues, beeing neare to all suche as dooe inhabite in those partes, as well Indians as Spaniardes, with the water of it they dooe heale greate deseases, and for this cause the people come more then sixe hundred Leages to heale themselves

selues with it. Some there be whiche heale by washing the selues in it, and drynking of the Water. Others there bee whiche heale by takyng of the *Sarcaparilla*, whiche groweth there, and it is vnderstoode that the vertue whiche it hath is taken of the water, of the Riuers, it is much vsed by the Indians, and by many Spaniardes, washing themselues many tymes therein, and taking in the morynge as muche as thei can many times drinke. They both pisse muche sweat muche, and with this they doe heale, and it is verie muche like to the bastes of *Luca*, and of *Pucoll*, and of many other whiche are in *Italie*. And as they doe vse of the water of the Fountaine of *Lion*, that healeth sa many and diuers diseases, in this maner they doe vse of the water of the Riuers of *Guaiaquil*, with bathyng theim selues in it, and with drynkyng muche water of it thei heale.

The other maner of curing whiche you haue in that Riuers, is the vse of the *Sarcaperilla*, whiche groweth there, and is like to *Briers* of *Spaine*, and great and thicke, the rootes of theim are the *Sarcaperilla*, whiche is sumwhat grosser then that of the *Honduras*, and is of colour a lyon tawny, and sumwhat sadde, there bee some rootes so large and depe, that it is nedeffull to digge the length of a man to get the out of this *Sarcaperilla*. Thei doe vse in that riuer two maner waters, the one is as the Indians doone vse it, and as thei vse it of old time. When it was discouered & first vse, and as the *Indias* did first vse it, thei caught it to our Spaniardes, whiche is to take the Rinde of the *Sarcaperilla*, with out the harte if it bee greene, it is not needfull to late it in water, but if it be drye, it is needfull to late it in water as muche tyme as it requireth, that it may bee made softe. And there muste bee taken a good quauitie of it, and afterward this Rinde of the *Sarcaperilla* beynge greene or waktered, must be cut into small peeces, and it must be beated in a Morter, puttynge to it water in suche sorte, that the Joyce may bee taken out of it, of the whiche they take in the morynge

*The vse of
the Sarca-
perilla.*

*How they do-
vse the Sar-
caperilla.*

*How they do-
make it and
vse it in
Guaiaquil.*

The second part of the thynges that

nyng as muche as they can drinke at once or in diuers tymes, and after they doe cast them selues into a sweat, and they swete so muche, that it runneth by the Bedde in great quanticie. Afer that they take cleane Cloathes, and dooe eate of a Henne, they drinke of no other thyng but of that Joyce whiche they tooke out of the Rinde of the *Sarcaparilla*, as well at Dinner, as at Supper, for that you maiste eate verie little, and likewise at dinner. And that they dooe procure to keepe themselues from the aire and from the colde all that they can, although in that Village of *Guaia-quill*, whiche be about fiftie houles, or fewe more, the mooste of them are Cotages, and of little sauergarde, and the walles be of Canes, and there be no Chambers on high, but in that a lowe they dwel al, and of litle defence, being in this order and small comforde. Of Conserua and drye Fruite, whiche were necessarie, yet in eight or nine daies they remaine whole of all the deseases, that they dooe heale with the *Sarcaparilla*, and of many others whiche should be very large to speake of. It is sufficient that there goe no manne from thence whiche retourneth not whole, although that he had never so greevous a desease, so that it be not sharpe Agueus: For in that case the cure hath no place, or in anie other sharpe desease. All other deseases they doe heale with marueilous successe, as it is seen by the greate number of people whiche come therher, that goe awaie whole, of the deseases, whiche they bring therher, it is neverfull that hee whiche doth enter into this cure be strong and not weake, for that if he be, hee can not suffer so greate sweat, without great perill of his person.

*A norber
wate to take
it.*

For these euilles they haue an other maner of Water, that is, takynge of fourre ounces of *Sarcaparilla* rather moore then lesse. For that there they use neither waight nor measure, but they doe put of all at discretion, and they doe take awaie the Rinde from the *Sarcaparilla*, and they breake the Rinde, without putting of it in water, if it be greene, and if it

if it be dry, thei breake it & put it in water, vntill it be made soft: this rinde being without the harte, thei seeth in fower Pottelles of water, little moze or lesse, and thei seeth it vntill that halfe the water bee deminished, rather moze then lesse: and of that water thei drinke as muche as thei can in many tymes, or at one time, and forchwith thei put them to sweate, & although thei sweate not so muche, as thei sweat with the first water, yet thei wil heale, thei moue their clothes, thei eate of a Pullet, thei keepe them selues from the cold and ayze, and at dinner & supper, thei vse the self same water, for that in one daie thei consume one seethyng: this people doeth take it in this maner fiftene or twentie daies, and in this sorte also thei dooe heale of all their euilles and deseases, with the greate admiration of the people: and for the vse of this *Sarcaparilla* thei doe not except any desease, vntesse it bee feuers or sharpe deseases: these people doeth not poure at the beginnyng, as wee dooe here, nor in the middesse, nor in the ende of the cure, for there is no other phisition nor Medicine, but certayne wemen whiche bee there, that giue the water: thei are women phisitours, and thereof thei dooe take awaie, and put to, as thei seeme good.

That whiche I doe note in this busynesse is to seeth the *Sarcaparilla* without the harte: and that thei vse not but of the Rinde, whiche seemeth to bee very well: and very conformable to good Phisicke, for the rootes whiche be harde, should be taken awaie, as a ching superfluous, and without vertue and profite, rather it dooeth let and disrule, that it doth not worke that whiche is desired with it, & the vertue is in the Rinde: and this is that whiche wee doe commonly vse, whē we will profite our selues of it. And so from hence-
forwarde, when I shall ordaine this water for any whiche hath neede of it, I will vse of the Rinde only.

And so I doe ordaine at this present, Whiche is taking fower ounces of *Sarcaparilla*, and take awaie the harte,

Note.

The maner
how to make
the water of
the Rinde of
Sarcaparilla

X.i. and

The second part of the thinges that

and the Rinde beeyng washte, caste it to wet in fourt
tels of Water, for one naturall daie, and after seeth it till
halfe be consumed, and if you feare heate in the sicke body,
put to it an ounce of Barley, with the huskes taken awaie,
that it may seeth with it, and if there be much heate in place
of common water, let it be made with the water of Suckery.
with the Barley, and it will be a thing most temperate, and
in suche it will make marueilous effectes, as we haue expe-
rimented in many.

Note.

That whiche in this cause I haue considered, and that
whiche I haue profited my selfe is, that they drinke as
muche as they can at one tyme, or in many tymes, whiche
surely doeth great effect in prouocation of sweate. For the
sweate muche by drinking of muche water, and they heale
better, and more quickly, and that as should be doen in ma-
nie daies, is dooen in fewe, and with more certaintie to re-
maine whole. Surely these be two thinges whiche doe im-
pose much, the one to vse the Rinde without the harte, and
the other to drinke muche water in the morwynge, at once
or at manye tymes, that thereby it maye prouoke muche
sweate.

Note.

In the rest let every one vse of the diet that he can suffer,
keeping the vertue, for that is it whiche healeth the disea-
ses. We doe see that in the Bathes of Italie, and Almanie,
the sicke people doe take of that Mineral water, xx. or xxx.
little cupfulls before he eate, and all he doth put together
with the Humor whiche is the cause of the disease, by the
whiche he doth heale either by sweet, or by Urine, and with
this they doe heale of so many infirmitiess, as we doe see,
written by graue authoress, and so I dooe beleue, that this
newe vse will do to them, that doe take it, and vse it to their
greate benefit, and profite, and that they shall better heale
and more easly, and in lesse tyme, by doyng it with the o-
der aforesaide.

From the newe kingdome they doe bring a Rinde, that
they

they doe late it is of a Treē verie great, whiche doeth carry
leaues after the forme of a Harte, and beareth no fruite.
This Treē hath a grosse Rinde, very drye and harde, in this
and in the coulour it is verie muche like to the coulour of
Guaiacan: In the vetter partes it hath a little thinne skinne
whitelishe, beynge broken throughout, the Rinde is thicker
then a finger, drye and waightie, whiche beynge taken, it hath
a notable bitternesse, like to *Genciana*, with some sweete
taste, for at the ende of the chawyng of it there commeth
from it a good smell. The Indians dooe greatly esteeme of
this Rinde, and they vse it in all kinde of fluxe of bloud, or
otherwise, the Spaniardes beynge muche troubled with
this infirmicie: by the advise of the Indians haue vsed of
this Rinde, and many of them haue healed.

They take of it as muche as of a little Beane, made pouder, and they take it in redde wine, or in water made for the purpose, as the heate and the desease is, it must be taken in the morwyng fallyng thre or fourt tymes, wsling in the rest the gouernemente that is conuenient for theim, that haue the fluye. And it is so good, that they whiche come from those partes doe highly commende it: and they bring it as a thing wonderfull, for the remedy of this disease, I doore thinke it to be no small thing, considering that the disease is hard to be healed. I had a peice of the Rinde about thre or fourt daies past, of the whiche I will make experiance, with more thinges, and ther will geue knowledge of all in the thirde parte, God willing, we will write of the selfe-same matter, I haue made experiance of it twoo tymes alreadie with marueilous successe, for that it hath taken away the fluye, whiche hath continued of long tyme.

The use of it.

of Amber Gryse.

X. i. 3 being

10. **Argus**
Coll. et dicitur protulit oculum suum in meum. Quod est? Unus puerus.

The second part of the thynges that



Beyng with Ihon Gotierres Telo, a Gentleman very principall, and Treasurer of the Contratation house, a Passenger whiche came fro the Florida gaue hym a peece of *Amber Grise*, verie excellente, saying that hee broughte it from the Florida, I tooke it, and brake it, and it was perfite grese, of a ver

ry good colour, and the peece in the uttermost parte was blacke, and I did aske hym that broughte it where he had it, he saied that he gathered it in the coast of the Florida, and that they haue it commonly of the Indians, that dooe gather it, in that Coaste, and they dooe take muche pleasure of it with greate delight, and content, annoyncting their faces with it, and other partes, for his good smell whiche hee hath. And surely it maketh mee maruell to see that in sure Occidentall Indias, there was so excellent *Ambar*, and that the time hath discouered it vnto vs, and there hath come from those partes not onely so muche riches, of Silver and Gold, Pearles, and other pretious stones, but that now they bring vs suche excellent *Ambar Grise*, a thing so esteemed in worlde, and so muche it is vsed for the health of the body, and so necessarie it is to cure, and to heale with it, so many and divers infirmities, as we will speake of, a thyng for the delicate of mankynde, an ornamēt, and contente, whiche so muche serueth for manne. I doe vnderstānd also that other passengers broughte of the like *Ambar*, and some in muche quantitie, for the whiche I was verie gladd, and the firſte peece that I ſaw was verie ſuspicious vnto mee, and after that I had ſeen more, then I did beleue that there was of it, in those partes, whiche is ſounde caſte vp vnto the Coaſte.

Some there be whiche do thinke that it is the ſeede of a Whale, as it hath beene an auncient opinion, whiche is false,

*The Ambar
is not the
ſeede of the
Whale but a
Guame.*

as Simion Archiatros a Greeke autho^r doth shewe it, saying that the *Ambar* in divers places doeth spring, they bee his fountaines from whence they doe spring, as those of *Piche Lico*, the worste is that whiche these fishes doe taste, and swallowe downe. &c. The same doth seeme *Scapio* to understande, if it be not this *Simeon* a Greeke and *Actio*. I finde no other Greekes that dooe make mention thereof, it is a thing treated of the Arabies with so great ignorance and confusion as may be seen. Whosoever by them will verifie what *Ambar* is, it is to bee determined vpon that it is a kinde of *Pitche* that doth come forth, and spring, of *Fountaines*, that are made in the deaue of the *Sea*, and comming forth to the aire, the *Lico* beynge grosse it doth congele, and waxe harde, and doth make the *Ambar* whiche we see, as many thinges whiche are in the lower parte of the *Sea*, are softe and tender, beeyng taken out to the aier are made harde. As we see in the *Corall*, so that in the lowe partes of the *Sea* it is softe and tender, and bringing it to the aier it is tourned a stone, and the *Ambar* wherof the *Beades* are made in the low partes of the *Sea* it is white, and beyyng come forth to the aier, it turneth harde and stonie, and it is *Pitche*, which doth come forth of a fountaine, whiche is in the *Germane Sea*, with this the barbarous opinions are confounded, that say the *Ambar* is the stene of the *Whale*. And the cause wherof this ignorance came is that *Ambar* was found in the *Whales*, and other fishes, saying that it did growe of their owne nature in their *Mawes*, and as this *Pitche* doth rise up to the highest partes of the *Sea* by reason of the lighenes it hath, the *Whales* doe denoue it, thinking that it is a thing to be eaten, and so they doe finde it in their *Mawes*. For if it were seved, it woulde be in other partes of their bodies, where it is naturall to all beastes. In my tyme was taken a *Whale*, in the coast of the *canaria* that had more then one hundred pound waight of *Ambar*, and after that they killed manye, and

Simeon a
Greek au-
thor.

Coral.

Ambar concealed.

The Amber
was founde
in the Wha-
les Mawe.

The second part of the thinges that

*Whales of
the Coast of
the Florida.*

found none.

They that come from the Florida dooe saie that there be Whales by these coastes, and that they haue killed them and finde neither *Ambar* nor other thing in their Whales, more then silbes, and that in the yong Whales whiche are verie greate, although they haue killed them they finde nothing in them, for that the Indians doe fiske them, and take them with þ greatest cunning that may be imagined, which is that one Indian doth take a long cord, and strong, made with certaine ginnes, and he putteth himselfe into a little Boote, and he goeth towarde the Whale where hee seeth hym comming with his yong Whales, and he goeth to one of them and leapeþ vpon him, and doth cast his snare vpon his snowee, the strong young Whale when he feeleth this, he goeth doun to the deepeþ of the Sea, and the Indian abraþed fast with him, they are greate swimmers, and dooe suffer to be long in the water, the young Whale as he hath neede to breath, hee doeth recourse vþ to the heighth of the Sea. And in the tyme that he doth come vþwarde, the Indian doth carrie with hym a sharpe wedge, and doeth put it through his Nose where he doth breath, and he striketh the wedge into hym with his fiske, in liche sorte, that the young Whale can not cast it from hym, and when he commeth vþ on heigh, the Indian doeth gene hym corde, and taketh his Boote, and goeth after the young Whale, and as hee can not breath hee doth choke hym easlie, and hee commeth to the lande. It is surely a delicate and maruelous hunting, in the whiche they haue so muche cunning, that a great Lizard or Crocadile of xxxiiij. foote, the mosse horrible and cruell beast that is in the Sea one Indian doth kill. Some doe saie, that the *Ambar* is made of certayne fruite that is at the Seaside, where Whales bee, and in the Moneth of Apill and Maye, when it is in season, and of sweete smell, the Whales doe eate it, and of that the *Ambar* is made: as if the fruite so eaten, wold be couerted into an other thing then

then into bloud and fleshe. There be many other opinions, whiche haue been in this busynesse, what *Ambar* shoulde bee of, whiche is confuted and undoon, and it is understande, that it is a kynge of pitche whiche doth spring of Fountaines that there are in the deapthe of the *Sea*, in particular partes of it, as we see that there be of *Petroleo*, of *Napta* of *Sulphur*, and of many other thinges, as be in our *Occidental Indias*, of other diuers *Licoys*, the best *Ambar* is that whiche is most like to a redde coulour, the white is not so good, and the woorste of all is the blacke.

The *Ambar* hath greate vertues, and doeth serue in the woorlde for many thynges, and so it is a thyng of greate pycce: for that whiche is goos is worthe at this daie, two cypmes more then the moste fine *Gold*. For the contentmeint of manne, and for the delicateenesse of the woorlde, it serueth for many thynges: with it thei make Beades, and fine perfumes, and odorous smelies, and water of *Angelles* of moste sweete smell, in diuers formes and fashions: with it thei doe vysse gloves of diuers sortes, and make chyldrens and licours, of moste sweete and delectable smelles: it serueth for meates and drinke, in diuers and sundrie formes whiche to reporte, will be a large processe.

In medicinall thinges his vertue is greate, and it doeth profite very muche in our *Medicines*, for it cureth in the moste principall matters of *Physiche*, whiche is compounded in the *Poticaries* *Shoppes*, as well *Leuuaries*, as *Confectiōs*, *Powders*, and *Pillies*, *Preparacions*, *Dimentiōs*, *Plaisters*, and many other thynges, that doeth receiue greate vertues therewith: and with the name of it, there is made a confection called *Die Ambar*. The vertues whiche it hath in periculare are greate, and of greate effectes, for that with it is healed diuers and sundrie deseases. And this the *Arabians* did teache vs: for of the *Greekes* onely *Simonon* *Seato*, and *Actio* spake a fewe and herte wordes of it, and *Aquaric* did make the like mention of

Whiche is best.

The vertues of the amber

The medicinall vertues whiche it hath.

The second part of the thynges that

it. These three authours beyng Grekes, were afer that
tyme that the Arabiens do write, and thei made some re-
cpte of the Medicines, and thynges whiche thei wote of,
that the aunciente witters made no mention: and one of
them is Ambar, whiche the olde Phisitians knewe not be-
fore the Arabiens, for thei made no mention of it.

*His comple-
xion.*

His vertues is to heale, dissolve, and comfort any maner
of wate, wherein it is applied: For that his complexion is
hotte and drye, with some farnesse, and it giueþ vertue to
molifie, and make soft, with the more vertues that it hath.

*It doth com-
forte the
braine and
the Senowes.*

And beynge applied to the Braines, in the maner of an
opuermant made, and meleyng it with the Pessell of a Mor-
tar beynge hotte, and mingled with the oyle of the floweres
of Dringes: in this sorte it taketh awaie the greef of the
herte, it doeth comfort the Senowes, it doeth dissolve any
maner of colde whiche is in them, with a greate preroga-
tive and helpe, aswell in this forme, as in makynge a plati-
nder of *Alpia Muscara*, whiche is made of certaine compou-
ndes, that it bee put continually to that part.

*What the
smell of the
Ambar doth*

Smyllyng vnto it in the peece, or makynge a Pomander
of it, mingled with Puske, Lignaloe, it doeth comfort the
braines, and it doeth open the vnderstandingy: of the one
sorte, or of the other, beynge applied vnto it, it maketh a
good memorie, and helpeth the vnderstandingy, that it may
bee better and more perfite. And it is conuenient that wee
use it more then women, for the herte whiche the good
smell dooeth vnto them, whiche bee greeued with the Mo-
ther, thei ought not to use it: if there were not a descending
of the Mother to the lower partes: for in such case it were
conuenient to smel muche to it, for it causeth the Mother
to rise vp to his place, with the good smell, and takynge the
euill by the inferiour partes. And likewise by smellying vnto
it, it doeth conforte the harte, and doeth make the Spi-
rites valente and better: and for this purpose it profiteth,
beyng carried aboye one, smellying to it, in the tyme of the
Pestilence,

Pestilence, and of corrupte syres, for to resisse the corruption, and malice of them, with his vertue and sweete smell.

This is a marueilous thyng how muche the Ambar doeth profite and succour them, whiche her olde, in any maner of soore that thei haue it; and although with his excellent smell it doeth comforthe the spirites, and the braines of the hedde it dooeth also makechynne flegmatyke humours, whiche doeth continually abounde. And some dooeth say, that the use of it doeth holde batke the age, and dooeth conserue that it goe not forwarde: it is good that suche use be it in choyce meases, and in swete fanelles for their apparell and Chambers, and applied to the braine and harte: and that thei byng it to smell in their handes continually: and that it bee putte into the wine, wherewith thei washe their handes and face: for it is a marueilous thyng how muche it comforther, and giuech strength, in the whiche I haue seen maruellous effectes, and thei whiche are olde and crooked, that dooeth use it, shall see greaunce good, that it will doode to cheir.

In paines of women, it is amarueilous remeade, mingled with the Lode stone, and Galueme, made in little plasters laid vpon the nauill, for to keepe the Mocher in his place, and for the rest of the paines of it. Cheesly by smel-lyng to it continually, it doeth profite women that the Mocher mate comedoun. And if it rise vp, put into it a Tent of Cotten woll, dissolved with oile of liquid Ambar, it ma-kech it come doun. Putte into the mouche of the Mocher, in women whiche doeth not byng for the children, for the colonesse that is in them, I doe use to take this confection, whiche is made with Ambar twoo partes, and the scrapping of Quorie one parte grounde small, halfe a parte of Lignaloe made pouder, and with a little Huske, of the whiche make Pillies, and thei muste take three, that maye waite thre pence, from thre to thre daies: puttynge to it the little plastrer, whiche is spoken of to the nauill, and

*The Ambar
is a great re-
medy for
them that be
olde.*

*In paines of
women.*

The second parte of the thynges that

the tent in the mouthe of the Mother: surely it dooeth profite muche the uniuersall evacuations, beyyng made, and it must be used many daies.

Par the enys
of the sto-
macke.

The Amber dooeth profite muche for the deales of the stomacke, and for the coldnesse of it: by syng to bee putte in a plastrer made therof, and of *Adipis Adocata*, and of *Scorache*, after the maner of a brest plate, put to the stomacke: and of he self same thyng mingled, made Pilles, or mingled with wine, of sweete smell, takyng it in the morynge fastyng. So, that it dooeth dissolve windes, it taketh awaie any maner of colde whiche is in the stomacke, it helþ digestion, it giueth appetite, and luste to meate, and this is conuenience to hym that is colde of complexion, or for that whiche doeth rause the hurte of the stomacke, that commeth of colde: and therfore it shall bee conuenient for them that be colde, and colde of stomacke.

For the chylle
of the harte.

It doeth somforte the harte, and the Amber doeth heale the deales, principally ifche it come of windynesse, or of colde humoures. Takynge it by it self, or mingled with *Lbgnalo* and *Musk*, in maner of pouders, or pilles. For that the *Musk*, as *Auerois* dooeth saie, comferteþ more then all other sweete smelles that is in the worlde, for that has sweete saunour, and comforyng dooeth preuaile more then all other smelles. In any maner of waie that the Amber is applied, by it self, or with other thynges, in infirmities of the harte, it dooeth profite muche applied to the harte outwardly, in any maner of forme, it doeth comfort, strengthen, and doeth dissolve any humoure that is in you,

I doe cause Amber to bee grunde, and beyyng well mingled with *pearlum* waxe molten, and made therof a chynne cake, and put to the harte, it dooeth profite muche in the euilles of the harte, cheifly if that ther come firsse of windynesse, *Melancholie*, or of any other cause what so euer, so that it be not hotte.

Of th̄ that
be Melan-
cholie.

The Amber is very profitable to them that bee Melancholie.

cholie, for it maketh them very merie, takyng awaie the caules of the euill, and dissoluyng his windinesse, of the whiche there are very many grecued with all: and vnto suche it is good that if bee ministered, and that thei use it after the maner of Medicine mingled as we haue saied, in the mornginges: and also that that doe byng is laied vpon the harts, and vpon the braines, and that thei use it in meates, for surely I haue seen greates effectes dooren byng liche with it.

Where there is corruption of ayre, the Ambar dooeth rectifie by it self, by mingling with floures of sweete smel-les, the place heeyng perfumed with it, where thei should stande, principally in the tyme of Winter: and vnto suche as doeth suffer colde Remmes, in colde tymes: cheefly per-fumyng thei kercheves, whiche thei slepe with all, or his mixture, perfumyng the Thathder. Likewise, it is a marue-
lous thyng, what a good woorkē it doeth make.

And likewise it doeth good to them, whiche hath the pal-
sey, or weakenesse of Senewes: perfumyng them selues
with it, or with his mixture.

Thei that hath the Fallyng sickenesse, falling to theim
at their noses, when thei bee in their deuice, or exorixmos
the smoke of it maketh theim to dronke: and hearyng it a-
bout you, smellyng to it continually, the traunce doeth not
come so quickly and so strong. And those whiche doeth suf-
fer the desease of the Palseye, annoyntyng their hedde with
it, and all the vpper part of the hedde, it doeth manifist pro-
fite to them: for that the Ambar is a thyng that dooeth com-
forte the senewes and braines, moare then any thyng whiche
we knowe.

One thyng the Ambar hath, that it putteth admiration,
and Simeon Secto a Greeke authour dooeth saie, that if
any doeth smell to it before he drinke wine, it maketh hym
stande as if he were dronken: and if it bee put into the wine,
it maketh hym dronke in deede, in suche sorte that a little

P.ij. wine

It doeth rec-
tifie the ayre.

For thei that
hath the
Palseye.

For theim
whiche hath
the Fallyng
sickenesse.

The Ambar
dooeth make
dronke.

The second part of the thynges that

wine mingled with Ambar, callith vronkentelle, whiche
I haue seen by experiance, in the house of a grete Lorde of
this Realme, where for delicateesse, and daintynesse, ther
had a Halte seller of Ambar, as also Halte to calle into
meates: and to a Toster ther it was Ambar calle into his
wine, and he was made very dronke with it. Many other

thynges ther were to wrete of Ambar, but because
I would not passe the lymites of my purpose, I
dooe leaue to write of it. And because in
the thidde parte we will declare
that whiche wee meane
more to fale.

*The ende of the se-
conde parte.*



THE THIRD PARTE OF THE

MEDICINALL HISTORIE,

whiche doth treate of the

thinges that are brought frō
our occidentall Indias, which
doeth serue for the vse of
Medicines.

Where is put many thinges Medicinall,
that hath greate secretes
and vertues,

Now newly made by the saide Do-
ctor Monardes, after that he made
the firſte and ſeconde parte.



ДЯНТОН

III. Theoretical and methodological issues in the study of internationalization (continued)

oči obiši seb yd slavov a v yd vloží
slavov a vloží seb v yd slavov a vloží



Of the Sinamon of our Indias.



In the yere of 1540. Francis Pissarro did prouide to make to his brother Gonsalo Pissarro gouernour of the Prouince of Quito, and the Spaniardes weth therer with a good will, and they wente also vnto the countrie that was called of the Synamon, whiche was an other Prouince beyonde Quito, and the Sinamon was muche spoken of amongst the Spaniards, for it was vnderstoode of the Indians that it was a thyng of great riches.

Gonsalo Pissarro did depart with 200. Spaniardes, and it happekeveto hym euill in his iorney, for it was a sharpe countrey, and withoute vtraile, and with greate traueil they came to that prouince called of the Indians Somaca, where the Sinamon groweth, whiche is right vnder the Equinoctiall Lyne.

The Trees whiche doe beare it, are of reasonable greatnessse, they earie a leafe like to Laurell, they bee all the yere greene, and they never loose the leafe, whiche is a thinge common in all the Trees of the Indias. They beare their fruite vnto the likenes of a little hatte, that hath his cuppe and sides as greate as a peice of eight Rialles of Siluer, whiche is fourtey shillinges, and some greater, hee is of the coulour of a darke Tawny, as well without as within, he is smoothe in the Inner parte, and sharpe in bitter parte, in the highest parte of the Cuppe he hath a stalke, whereof he hangeth in the Tree, he is as thicke in the side as a peice of eight Rialles of siluer, and the uppemoste parte is fuller of bodie, and beevingt tasteth, it hath the same pleasauntesse of taste as the same Sinamon hath, whiche they bring from the India of Portingale, and so there doth remaine in the mouche.

The History of the conquest of the countrey, where the Sinamon doth growe.

The description of the Trees and of the fruite.

The second part of the thynges that

mounthe the same sweete smell, and taste, as the same **Sinamon** of the East India hath, and there doeth remaine in the mouth the same sweete smell and taste, & with some dymess, the self same it doeth beyng grossid, whiche doth respire out from it the same smell, whiche the most fine **Sinamon** hath. And in the meates wher it is put, it geuereth unto them the same taste and sauour that the **Sinamon** of the East India hath. The Trees haue a grosse Rinde, but without caste, sauour or smell, of the **Sinamon**. I can not tell if the little inner Rinde haue it, onely the Rinde I haue seen with the fruite, as it is saied, they saie that the leauers beyng beaten, do geue out some smell of **Sinamon**, only the vertue, sweet smell, and caste, is in the fruite, whiche is contrarie to the **Sinamon**, that is brought from the Oriental Indias, for onely in the rinde of the Tree is that which hath the sweet sauour and pleasaunt smell, as we doe all see. Truly it is, that some is better and of more sweete smell and taste, then other some is. For althoough that they are all one sorte of Trees, whiche doe geue the **Sinamon**, some haue the rinde thinnne, and that is the beste **Sinamon**, and others haue it grosse, and this is not so good, and therof it hath come that there bee some whiche doe distinguishe the **Sinamon** into diuers kindes. For one sorte they call **Cassis**, and an other **Sinamon**, & an other **Cassia lingua**, and it is all one kinde of Tree, that bringeth them forthe: but that the diuersitie of the place doeth bring forthe one more fine then an other, and so **Cassis** and **Sinamon** is all one, for that they differ not, but in the names, for all is **Sinamon**, thinnne, and fine, and where as you finde written **Cassis**, maye be put **Sinamon**, and where you doe finde **Sinamon**, **Cassis**.

*Cassis and
Sinamon is
all one.*

*Vertues
that it hath
in medicine,*

This our fruite that is called **Sinamon** doth profit in medicine for many thinges, being taken and made powder, it doeth comforthe the stomacke, it doeth dissolue windes, it taketh awaie the cuill smell of the mouth, & it is an impostane remedy for the griesse of the stomacke, it is cordiall, it maketh

maketh a good couler in the face, in dresse meates it is put and vsed even as Synamon is, because it doeth the like effect, that it doeth, by takynge the Powder of this fruite with Wine, or water made for it, it doth prouoke the Purgation of women, it is hot in the thirde degree, and drye in the first, but with notable comfortynge, for the drye partes that it hath.

¶ Of the Ginger.



On Frauncis de Mendosa, Sonne unto the vise Rore, Don Antony de Mendosa did sowe in the new Spaine Cloaues, Pepper, Ginger, and other spices, of those whiche are broughte from the Orientall Indias, and that whiche by hym was begonne was loste, by reason of his death, onely the Ginger did remain, for it did growe verie well in those partes, and so thei bryng it greene from the newe Spain, and other partes of our Indias, and some they bring drye, after the maner of that of the East India.

The Ginger is a Plant whiche doth carie his leafe like to Lirio, sumwhat moxe narrow, with the same greonenesse, the Roote is as it seemeth some greater then other, and when it is greene, it burneth not in the mouth, whereby being made small peeces, they are put into Sallettes, for because it geueth them both taste and smell, they sowe it, of the sedē that it doth bring forth of the same little roote, and of the one sorte and of the other it doeth ware greace, and after the Roote is growen greate, they take hym forth and drye hym, in the shadowe, where no moyst doth come, for that is it whiche doeth corrupt hym, and for this cause they bring it in drye earth and made in Conserua, although that here it maile be verie well made of that whiche is drye, puttynge the Roote, buried at the foote of a place where ma-

Don Frauncis de Mendosa.

The description of the Ginger.

The thirde part of the thynges that

*They bring
it in Conser-
u. and how
it is made.* ny rides, doth growe, for there it wareth softe, or washyng
it many tymes with hotte water, and so leauyng it in the
water vntill it bee soft, and after puttynge to it Suger, it is
made Conserua as well as the greene.

*His medici-
nall vertues.* This Roote hath greate vertue of *Arromaticall* smell
and taste, and with a notable sharpenes, it heateh notably,
it is good for the stomacke, and so it taketh awaie the grief
of it, when it commeth of a colde cause or windie, it maketh
the like effectes that the Peper doth, it giueth sauour, and
sweete smell, and good taste, vnto drest meates, where it is
put, it is correctible vnto many Medicynes, for because it
doth correct, and dresse them, and taketh away their malice,
and so they doe mingle it with *Turbith* and with *Agarico*,
and it doth correct them whereby they doe woork the bet-
ter, it helpeth digestion and strengtheneth the stomacke, it
doth corroborate the naturall heat, it geueth lust to meate
where it lacketh, for colde causes. This the Conserua doth
vertie well, whiche beeynge taken in the morynge it doth
make these effectes, and also maketh a good coulour in the
face, and it doth all the woxes whiche the Peper doth, and
so it is well nere of his complexion and temperature.

¶ Of the Rubarbe of the Indias.

*The descrip-
tion of the
Rubarbe of
the Indias.*



¶ Hei brought from the firme Lande, a piece of
a roote whiche is called their Rubarbe, and
surely it hath all the signes that the Rubarbe
hath, whiche is brought from Levant.

¶ It is rounde, the Rinde is more like to
blacke, the inner parte is redde, and beyng broken it doth
chaunge somewhat white, it dieth a couller like Saffron;
it is bitter, I am desirous to knowe what leafe it carrieth,
to see if it carry a leafe of it, whiche vnder this name many
in Spaine haue sowed muche, whiche casteth out certaine
leaves like to *Romaza*, and so I doe take it to bee a kinde
of

of it, for the seconde sorte doeth carry a redde roote: the leaues of this roote whiche I dooe take to bee *Romaza*, it doeth purge being sodden notably, muche more then the Roote, and so saith *Dioscorides*, that all kinde of *Romaza* doeth soften the heally notably.

The *Ruabarbe* is an excellente Medicine, and worthy to bee muche esteemed, and so highly thei haue praised it, all suche as haue wrote of it, I speake of the purgative *Ruabarbe*, whiche wee doe use to purge withall, for it was an other sorte, whiche the *Grekes* did knowe.

Note.

The *Ruabarbe* is an excellent Medicine, for because it is giuen with all assuraunce, in all tymes and in all ages, it purgeth Choller principally, and Flegme, it doeth comforte the Liver, and it is his life, it vndoeth opilations, it taketh awaie the Jaundise, and clarifieth the blood, and dyping this it doeth corroborate, and strengthen the spiritual members, and so it is geuen with all assuraunce, to them that hath any greeffes of the harte: some of it beeyng chewed in the morynge, it healeth any long and importunate deseases of the Liver, and of the Lungen, and of the Inner members: and doeth heale the *Dropsie* and *Timpany*, and maketh a good coullour in the face. It is hotte and drye in the seconde degree, with some parte pearthy, whiche doeth geue drynesse and comforte.

*The vertues
of the Ru-
barbe.*

Of the Pinnas.



He *Pinnas* are a fruite whiche bee moste sette of in all the *Indias*, as well of the *Indians* as of the *Spaniardes*, they are called *Pinnas*, for the likenesse that the Fruite hath to the *Pinnas*. And al- though hee be smoothe, yet hee hath cer- taine markes in hym whiche the *Pinna* hath. His fashion is like to a *Cuppe*, of hem, whiche he cal-

*The descrip-
tion of the
Pinnas.*

Z. iij. *led*

The thirde part of the thynges that

led emperiall, beynge broade alowe and narrowre aboue, and by the mouthe of him therre groweth ouer certaine Buddes, whiche are his Leaues, and dooe cause him to shewe verie faire, and these Buddes are so wen, and of them doth growe the Plances, whiche dooe cary the *Pimmas*, and one Plante doth not carie more then one *Pimma*, in the highest part of him, hee groweth greene, and as he goeth ripening, he turneth yeallowe, they take from him his Rinde, which is verie thynne for to eate, that as hee hath wichen him is white, and softe, and it doth melte in the mouth, with a verie good taste, and sweete sauour: sauing that hee hath manie small Carnelles rounde aboue hym, that it is needefull that you cast them from you as you goe eating of them, whiche are of a Purple coulour, his smell is like to a kinde of Quince, and where as there is a *Pimma* ripe, hee smelleth like to a Quince in all the house where he is.

His vertues

They take hym to bee good for the stomacke, and likewise for the harte, and to restore the appetite losse, it is a generall fruite in all partes of the Indias, and muche esteemed. He is to be eaten at the beginnyng of meate, and they vse to eate of hym in the hot after Nones: for they saie that it doth refresche, they are colde vnto me, they brought two sortes: the one drye, and the other in Conserua. The drye did serue for no other purpose, but to see the figure and the forme as is saied in Conserua, it hath a good tast, although sumwhat sharpe, it ought to be made in Conserua when it is greene.

¶ Of the Guaiaras.

The description of the tree whiche doth cary the Guaiaras.

Ghey brought mee from the firme lande the seede of the fruite whiche is so muche esteemed of the Indians, as of the Spaniardes whiche thei call *Guaiaras*, the Trees which doe carie this fruite are of a reasonable greatnessse, they do cast out their bowes dispersed,

dispersed. They carie a leafe like to the maner of Laurell, the flower of it is white, accordyng to the fashion of the flower of Oringes, sauing that they are sumwhat greater, it is of a sweete smell. This Tree doeth yelde muche fruite, wheresoever he be sownen, and he doth multiplie and sprede so muche a broad, that they take it to be euill for the ground where it groweth, for that in many pastures the people doe loose the feeding of their cattle by reason of them. And they doe weue themselves one with an other like to Briers, the fruite whiche they carie be like to our Apples, of the greatnessse of a Pippin, he is greene when hee beginneth firste to appeare, and as he ripeneth, he tourneth peallowe, in the inner parte he is white, and so in colour russet, and beynge cut, hee hath foure places deuided, where hee hath his seede, the which is like to the seede of Pedlers: being most hard, and of coulour Tawnie, all the stones within haue no carnel, they are without any sauour. And for to eate these Apples, they doe pare them from the Rinde, the fruite is holosome, and of good digestion: when they be greene they are geuen to them that haue the Laske, for they doe restraine and binde muche, and when they bee verie ripe, they doone make the bellie verie lasciatue when they be of a good season. They are good rosted for them that be whole, and for the sicke, for beynge so rosted they are more heathfull, and better, and of better taske. And the besste of the m are of the Trees whiche are tilled, the Indians doe vse the leaues in seething, with the whiche washing their feete being swolen, doth cause them to be unswollen, and the inner partes of the body being stopte or opilated, being walst with this seacing, they doe disopilate. It seemeth to bee a colde fruite, and so they geue them rosted: to them whiche haue hotte Agewes, it is verie common in all the Indias.

The thirde part of the thynges that

Of the Cachos.

The description of the Cachos.



So they did sende mee the Seede of a
Plante or Hearbe , that the Indians
doe muche esteeme , whiche they call
Cachos , the Cachos is an Hearbe verie
reddishe in coulour , it carrieth a rounde
leafe and thinne , it doth cast out a fruite
like to a Berengena of Spaine , where
the seede doth growe , it is verie small , and of a Russet cou-
lour , it hath a taste without anye Sharpenesse , onely in the
Mountaines of Peru this herbe is found.

His vertues

The Indians doth muche esteeme it, for þ medicinall ver-
tues that it hath , it maketh one to yisse well where the lack
of Urine is , it doth expell the Sande and Stones , whiche
growe in the Raines . And more they saie that the use of it
doth breake the stone from the Bladder , if the Stones bee
soft , that thei may be dissolued , with very little quantitie of
it , and of this they haue so many examples , that they dooe
cause me to maruell at it , because I do thinke that the stone
in the Bladder can not bee expelled , but onely to take hym
out is the remedie , and that no þysicke can dissolve hym .
They saie that takyng the seede grounde with some water ,
made for the purpose , doth cause it to be caste out in Cliae ,
and beynge come foorth it doth retourne to be congeled , and
tourneth it self a stone .

History.

Onely to a yonge manne I sawe that this did happen
vnto hym , he hauyng a stone in the Bladder , and I beeþing
certified of it by the Maister Surgions that had felt hym ,
and of the accidentes whiche he had , I caused hym to bee
carried at the beginnyng of the Summer , vnto the Foun-
taine of the stone , and in twoo monethes that he was there
he came whole from thence , and he brought in a paper all
the claye whiche he had putte from hym at tymes , beeþing
made stone in peeces : we will sowe the seedes for it is be-
ry

they bryng from the West Indias.

Fol. 92.

ry little, for to see the effecte doen by them, whiche thei saie
that is dooen in a cause so greate, and if it dooe growe, wee
will vse of it.

¶ Of the floures of Blood.



Sowed a seede whiche thei brought
me from the Peru, more to see his fair-
nesse, then for any Medicinall vertues
that it hath, the Hearbe commeth to
bee of the height of twoo paumes, lie-
tle more or lesse, the bowes doeth caste
out straight with certaine rounde lea-
ues, very greene and thinne, in the hiest of the bowes there
doeth growe a flower beyng peallow, very high in couller,
and onely he beareth fwe leaues, and in the middest of eue-
ry leafe there is figured a droppye of bloode, so redde and so
firmely kindled in couller, that it can not bee moxe. This
flower hath at the foote of it a stalke very longe, whiche
commeth out a good space from the flower: it is a flower very
beautifull, whiche doeth adorname the gardens, and it gro-
weth very well of the seede, or of the Plante: and beyng ta-
ned it hath the same sauour and taste the Mastiffsso hath,
it is noceable hotte.

The descrip-
tion of the
hearbe and
the flower.

Arinde of a Tree for the Reumes.



mongest the chynges whiche thei sent
me from the Peru; there is a thicke
rinde, and it seemeth to bee of a greate
Tree, and beyng casted it hath a sharp-
nesse of taste with some dixelle: the
Trees be growyng at the side of a Ri-
ver, where this rinde is taken of, which
is twende and sixe Leagues from Lima, and thei are not
founde

The thirde part of the thynges that

The vse.

founde in other partes of the Indias, but onely there, it is after the fashion of an Elme, as well in the greatnesse, as in the leaffe. The Indians when thei doe feele them selues laden with Reumes, or hath the Cough, or any paines of the hedde, thei make powder very small of the rinde of the Tree, and dooe take it at their noses, and it dooeth cause them to purge muche at them, and with this thei cleare them selues of the euill: whiche we haue experimeted, by takyng the powder at the nose, it maketh them to purge notably. It seemeth to bee more then hotte in the seconde degree.

Of the Pacall.

The vse.



At the same Riuier there groweth an other Tree, whiche the Indians doeth call Pacall whiche Tree is lesser then that we haue spoken of: The Indians dooe use of it made in Ashes mingled with Soppe, it taketh awaie any maner of soze or skabbe in the hedde, for greuous that it bee, as well those whiche doeth growe in the hedde, as in the bodie: as also it taketh awaie the markes of the saied skabbes or sozes beyng never so olde. Hether thei sent me a little of the woodde, wherewith the Ashes are made, that we might make experiance of it.

Of the Paico.



Hei sente me an Hearbe that in the Peru thei call Payco, thei bee certaine leaues after the maner of the leaues of Lanten, of that makynge and greatnesse, and as thei come drie thei are verye thynne: and beyng casted, thei haue a notable brightynge, wherby thei seeme to bee very hotte. And beyng made powder

they bring from the *West Indias*.

Fol. 93.

der and taken in Wine, thei take awaie the greefe of the stone in the kidnes, whiche commeth of windinesse or cold causes: beyng sodden and made a plaister, and laien vpon the greefe, thei take it awaie.

His vertues

An Hearbe for the euill of the Raines.



Ikewise thei sent me an other Hearbe, whiche doeth profite muche in the euill of the Raines, when it commeth of a hotte cause: The Juice mingled with an noyntement of Rosees emongest it, and putte vpon it one of the leaues or more if it bee needfull for inflammation, the ioyce there of beyng putte, it dooeth profite muche, for it doeth resisse inflammation, and dooeth mitigate the paine. The leaues whiche thei sent me, bee like to small Lettise, with the same greatnesse, and beyng casted thei are of an euill sauour, it seemeth to be some Hearbe notable cold.

His vertues

*¶ Of a fruite vvhiche groweth
under the grounde.*



Hei sent me from the *Peru* a fruite very good, that groweth vnder the yearth, and very faire to beholde, and of a very good taste in eatyng, this fruite hath no roote, nor doeth produce any plant, nor plant doeth produce it, but that it is growen vnder the grounde as the *Turmas* bee growyng vnder the yearth, whiche are called of the yearth: It is of the greateenesse of halfe a finger rounde, and rounde about theim with a very faire woorke, it is of a bale coullour: It hath within it a litle eernell, that when it is dye, it maketh a sounde with in, like to an

*The description
of it.*

A. s.

Almonde;

The second parte of the thynges that

Almonde: the riade of it is caunie, and somewhat white, par-
ted into twoo parces like vnto an Almonde. It is a fruite
of good sauour and taste, and eatyng of it, it seemeth that
you eat Nuttes.

Where it
groweth.

This fruite groweth vnder the yearth, in the coaste of
the Riuers of Maronnon, and it is not in any other parte of
all the Indias: It is to bee eaten greene and drye, and the
beste waie is to tolle it, it is eaten alwaies after meates, as
fruite eaten laste of all, because it dryeth muche the stomack
and leaunch it facillieth, but if you eat muche of it, then it
geuereth heauiness to the hedde. It is a fruite in greate re-
putation, as well emongest the Indians, as the Spaniar-
des, and with greate reason, for I haue eaten of them,
whiche thei haue brought me, and thei haue a good taste. It
seemeth a temperate fruite.

Of the fruite called Leucomata.

It is like to
Chestnutes.



Hei brought me likewise a fruite of a
Tree that the Indians dooeth call *Leu-
comata*, whiche is like vnto a Chestnute
of these of burs, as well in coulter as in
the greatnesse, as also in the whitnesse
that the Chestnute hath: It seemeth
that within it is an other thyng, I did
not breake it to see what it was, for because thei brought
me but twoo of them, the one I haue sownen, and the other
I haue for to Sowe at an other tyme. This fruite dooeth
beare a Tree of muche greatnessse, for it is of timber strog
and harde, he dooeth caste his leaues like to *Madronno*,
whiche is a Redde berie, growyng in the Mountaines of
Spaine. This fruite dooeth serue to bee eaten, for that thei
say it is of a good taste, and good for the lasker: for because
it is very drye: thei say it is a temperate fruite.

J Of the Beades stonesto
w^uashe w^uithall.



Hei sent me a little Chesse made of Coxke
full of rounde Beades stones and blacke,
with muche beautie, that thei seeme to bee
of the woodd Ebano: and thei haue of a fruite
whiche a small Tree dooeth beare, b^{ee}yng
more crooked then straight, after the ma-
ner of Briers: and he carrieth a round fruite as greate as
a Nutte, couerted with a certaine fleshinesse cloung therew^uer,
the whiche b^{ee}yng taken awaie, there remaineth a round
Beade stone, and so rounde that it can not bee rounder, of
blacke couller moste harde that it can not be h^uoken.

How it is
fruite.

This fruite doeth serue in place of Sope, in suche sorte
that twoo or three of these with hott water doeth more ef-
fecte for to washe, and to make cleane cloathes, then one
pounde of Sope dooeth: and so it rai^useth the fome, and
doeth all the effectes that the Sope dooeth, and thei goe
washyng by little and little, vntill onely the Beadstone doe
remaine, whiche is on that whiche this fruite is founded
on, and al are pearced through: and there are made of them
Beades to p^{ay}te upon, whiche doeth seeme to bee of Ebano,
thei dure a long tyme, for as thei are Beades so harde, thei
breake not: this fruite is so bitter, that neither beaste nor
Bird commeth to it, for his bitternesse. I haue Holwen
some of the Beades, and thei haue growne, and thei doo^ue
caste out from them faire leaues very greate: I doo^ue truste
that thei will bryng for the fruite, for now the Planees are
verie litle at the tyme thei will giue it vs.

Sope.

Of the Crabbes of that countrie.

The thirde parts of the thynges that

Historie.



Genle manne whiche came from the firme Lande did certifie me , hauyng had certaine continuall Agues in that countrie , he came to bee in a consumpcion , and was counsailed to goe to certaine Ilandes , whiche is betwene Puerto Rico and the Margareta , for that there is in them greate quantitie of Crabbes , and thei are the besle of the wold , for because thei are maintained of Pigiones Egges , whiche goeth thereto to lye , and of the yong Pigiones that are there , and that he shold eate no other thyng but these Crabbes sodden : and he healeyn vertie well , and although he had eaten muche fleshe of Popingeis for that effecte , thei did not unto hym so muche good , as the Crabbes did : and in them that are consumed , thei haue a greate propertie , as Anenzor saith , and not onely thei doe profit to suche by manifest qualitie or degree , but their particuler propertie whiche thei haue , is for the same purpose .

Of the Cardones.

*His medici-
nall vertue.*



Because you should see the straungenesse of this Hearbe whiche bee the Cardones of the greatenesse of a Torche of eight squares , and wreathed like unto it , they brought them to mee , it hath a Medicinall vertue , that beynge newly beaten in a Morter and put into Soares , it doth heale and sover theym forthwith . And well here I my selfe had neede of it , for this effect : for that one of the Thornes that it hath , did prick me , thei are strong as Neddles whiche did hurte mee , it seemeth to be a straunge hearbe .

Of an hearbe for suche as are broken.

Thei



Hey sent me a little of an hearbe,
and by reason it was so drye it
came small broken into peeces,
that the figure of it coulde not be
seen, the whiche they wrote that
it is maruelous for theym that
are broken, whether thei are chil-
dren or men that haue that kinde
of griefe, and in those partes thei
haue it for a sure thyng, and it is vsed of one Indian, by
puttyng this hearbe greene, bypon that whiche is broken,
being menne of Chilcken. And he maketh thereupon a cer-
taine bindyng verie straunge, with out neede of any ma-
ner of Briche, made for the purpose, they may goe so faste
and so swifte being bounde therewith, as though they had
a peare of Briches, as one tolde me that had been healed of
of the like deseale, with the hearbe, and with the maner of
binding. I haue vnderstode if the maner of binding be as
good as this man speakeþ of, that it is sufficient to heale
wchouer the Hearbe, or any thing elles, by reason that I
sawe a man of *Cordona* whiche did heale all persones that
were broken with onely the binding that he made, vnto
them, with out puttynge to them any maner of Briche. And
this is certayne, that there besonne here that were healed
and cureþ by hym.

Of the Veruaine.

hat Gentleman doth witten me from the Pe-
ninsulæ in the Riuers of the Mountaines of
that countrie nere unto them there groweth
a greate quantite of *vernatia*, like unto that
of Spaine; the whiche the Indians doe pro-
fite chomphica in their cures, for maugistrates, and in
His vertues
A. iii. especially

The second parte of the thynges that

especially againstste all kinde of payson, and for such as saie
that there hath been geuen to them a morsell, or the like
thing.

Historie.

I speake here with a Ladie whiche came from the *Peru*,
and she did certifie me that she hauyng bieng many peres sick
and beying cured with many phisitions, wente to an In-
dian, that was knowne to bee a man that knewe muche of
herbes, with whom the Indians did cure them selues, and
that he gaue here to drinke a Joyce clarifed of *Vernaine*,
that she her selfe made, and within a fewe daies that she had
taken it, she cast out from her a worme, she saide that it was
a hearie Snake, of more then twoo spannes long, and verie
great, and he had his taile parted, and after she had cast hym
out from her, she was well, and whole, and she counselled a
gentleman whiche was in the *Peru*, that was continually
sick to take it, and he take it in the morayng with Sugar,
for so she had taken it, because of the bitternes that it hath,
and he cast out a greate number of long and small wormes,
and one like to a white long girdell, and since that tyme he
hath very wel his health. And this she had counselled other
persones whiche were sick to doe, that had suspition to
haue wormes, and with the use of the saied joyce they cast
from them many, and they were healed. And it was so cer-
tainly, and she shewed to me a sexuaunte of hers, and it was
saied according to the greeuolnes of a disease, whiche hee
had, that there was giuen unto him certaine thynges of
witchcraft, and with the joyce of the *vermaine* that he cooke,
he cast by vomite many thynges out of his stomacke, of di-
uers coulours, and it was said that it was that wherewith
he was bewitched, and being cast forth, he remained whole,
and in that whiche doeth touche witchcrafte I will speake
what I haue seen.

Witchcrafte.

*Notable hi-
storie.*

I sawe a seruaunt of Ithon de Quincard Deneau, beying
Aburgales, that did caste out of his mouth in my presence a
great bundell of heare, of a brown colour, very stank, she
he

he had in a Papar more then two times as muche, which he had cast by two hower s before, and he remained as though he had cast by nothing at all, more then the alteration that he had to see, that he had cast them.

Ithon Langius an Almaine Phisition, and verye well learned; doth saie that he sawe a woman that did complaine muche of paine in her stomacke, did caste out many peeces of Glasse, and peeces of earther Platters, and of fishe bones where with she remained whole.

Ithon Lan-
gius historie.

An other case like vnto this Benenensis doeth speake of in that of *morbis mirandis*, but that as I doe moste marueil at, was that a labouryng man as he did suffer great paines of his bellie, and that no Medicine did profite hym, hee did cut his owne Throate with a knife, and after that hee was dead, they did open hym and found in his belly great quanticie of heare, whiche hee that I haue spoken of did vomite the like, with many other peeces of Yron. These thinges I doe attribute to the workes of the Deuill, for that they can not be reduced to naturall workes, the veruaine is like that of Spaine, and all the yere it is greene.

Benenensis
Historie.

¶ Of the Mastuerco.



Have an herbe broughte from the *Peru*, which they call *Mastuerco*, it is a little hearbe, and doth cary certaine small leaues being round, whiche beeyn beaten in a Morter, and the Joyce of it put into any maner of wounde, it doeth refreshe, consoorte and heale, curing it soowith, and the use of it is not more nor less then the use of the *Tabaco*, in woundes whiche bee freshly hurtt, washeng them with the Joyce, and putting the beaten leaues to it, and beeyn tasted it seem eth that it is notable hot.

His vertues

¶ Of the small vvilde Lettise:

Likeylse

The thirde part of the thynges that

It doeth take
awaie rothe-
ache.



Ikewise thei brought me from the same par-
tes an other Hearbe, whiche they call wilde
Lettise, his leaues be like to Lettise, his cou-
lour is a sadde greene, he hath vertue to take
awaie the Toothe ache, takyng the seethyng
whiche is made of the leaues, and holdyng it in the parte
where the grieve is, and putting a little of the Joyce in the
Tooch, whiche is greeued, it taketh awaie the paynes, and
the leaues which are stamped, after the Joyce is taken out,
must be put vpon it, and being tasten it is most bitter, it see-
meth to be hot in moze then in the first degree.

Of the licour wchich is called Ambia.

His medicin-
all vertues



In a greate Cane they sent me a Licour
whiche doeth springe out of a Fountaine
that is neere to the See side, it is of the
coulour of Honie, and as thinne, the smell
is like the Tacamahaca, they saie and also
they write, that it hath greate Medicinall
vertues, chiefly in the healyng of oulde deseales, and that
whiche commeth of colde caules. It doeth take awaie the
paines of any parte of the bodie, proceeding of colde or of
windinesse. It taketh awaie the colde in what parte soeuer
it be, it doth conforte and dissolute any maner of swellyng,
and it doth all the effectes that the Tacamahaca and the Ca-
ranna doeth, and so they vse it in those partes, in places of
them, you maie noe touche or handle it with youre handes,
vntille you haue them wete, and wheresoeuer it be put, it
doth holde faste, that is can not not be taken awaies, vntille
it be wasset with long tyme. They sent mee this litle fo^r a
shewe, because they doe esteeme it greatly, and so they sent
it as a thing verie precious, it seemeth to mee hotte in the
thirde degree with notable clammines.

Of

thei bryng from the *West Indias.*

Fol. 97.

*Of the Tree that doth shewe if one
shall live or die:*



In the yere of 1562. When the Earle of Nieba was in the Peru, he had thore a gentlewoman whiche was married that serued hym, and her housbande waxed sicke of a greuous deuse, and an Indian of greate reputation seyng her to be in much sorwre: saied to her, if he would knowe whether her housbande would live or die of that deuse, that he would sende her a Bowe of an hearbe, that she should take it in her leste hande, and that she shoulde holde him faste, for a good while, and if he shoulde live, that then she should shewe muche gladnesse, with holdyng the Bowe in her hande, and if he should die: that then she should shewe muche sadnesse. And the Indian sent her the Bowe, and she did as he had willed her to doe: and the bowe being put into her hande, she tooke so muche sadnesse and sorwre, that she put it a waike from her, thinking that she shoulde haue died, and so he died within a fewe daies, I was desirous to knowe if that it were soe, and a gentleman of the Peru that had been there many yeares, did certifie and saied unto mee that it was of trueth, that the Indians did this with their sicke people, it hath put mee in admiration, and in muche consideration,

Of the Granadilla.



Rom the firme lande they brought mee certaine Fruites whiche are Hearbes that they call in the Villas of the Peru where they grow *Granadillas*, and this name the Spaniardes did put to them, for the likenesse and fashion that they haue to our *Granadas*, whiche wee call

*The descript
tion of the
Granadillas*

Bb.1.

Poundgar-

The thirde part of the thynges that

Houndgarnardes, for that they are well neere of the same
greatnes & couler when thei are ripe, saing that thei haue
not a little crowne, and now thei are dry thei seeme within
that the Seede is like to the graines of Peares, sumwhat
greater, all full of little graines, very faire, and sheweth ve-
rie well, thei are white within, and without any sauor. The
plant that this fruite beareth is like to Iuy, and so it runneth
nech by and glingeth faste to any thing that is neere to it,
wheresoever it be set, it is faire when it hath fruite, for his
greatnesse it is a perticular Hearbe, and onely in one place
it is founde, it catcheth a flower like to a white Rose, and in
the leaues he hath figures whiche are thynges of the Pas-
sion of our loide, that it seemed as though they were painted
with muche care, whereby the flower is more perticulare
then any other that hath been seen. The fruite is the little
graines, whiche wee haue spokēn of, and when they are in
season they be full of Licour, sumwhat sharpe, and all full
of seede, whiche are opened as one doth open an Egge, and
the Licour is to bee supped by with greate contentement of
the Indians, and of the Spaniardes. And when they haue
supped it by, many doe not feele paines in their stomakes,
rather they soften the Belly, they seeme to be temperate,
with some moysture.

Of the Hearbe of the Sunne.

His is a notable hearbe, and althougt that now
they sent mee the seede of it, yet some yeres past
wee haue had it here, it is a straunge flower, for
it casteth out the greatest flowers, and the moste
perticulars that euer hath been seen, for it is greater then
a greate Platter or Dish, the whiche hath divers coulers.
It is needfull that it leane to some thyng, where it gro-
weth, or elles it will bee alwaies falling: The seede of it is
like to the seedes of a Pellon, sumwhat greater, his flower
doth

*The descrip-
tion of the
flower.*

wher tourne it selfe continually towardes the Sunne, and
for this they call it of his name, the whiche many other flow-
ers and hearbes do the like, it sheweth marueilous faire
in Gardines.

I Of a gumme that is taken out
under the grounde.

Since the Collos being a countrey of Peru,
there is a Province whiche doeth not
breake any Tree or Plante, for because
the grounde is full of Gummetes, and of
this grounde the Indians doeth take
out a licour, that doeth serue them to
heale many diseases, and to take it out
thei use it in this forme.

Thei doe make of the pearth certaine **Gessernes** very
greate, and thei put them byt their timber, or canes, and vader
neath thei putt a thyng, that mate take the liour, whiche
commeth out of them, and thei putt them into the Sunne,
and with the heate and strenght of it, the gumme is meltes
or the liour whiche the pearth hath, and the **Gessernes**
doeth remayne without any liour, the whiche doeth pro-
fice to make fire of the, for in that place therd are no trees,
nor any other thyng to make fire: and it is an euill light,
for it doeth caste out a blacke smoke, and an horrible smell,
and for all this, seyng thei haue no other thyng to make
fire of, thei passe with it.

How this li-
cour is taken
out.

The liour whiche doeth come forthe of it, doeth prof-
fice for many deseases, and especially when it doeth do-
pende of colde, or colde causes, it taketh awaie any greefe
of the saied cause, and all swellynge whiche doeth come
of it: thei heale with it woundes, and all the euilles whiche
the **Carana** doeth heale, and the **Tacamahaca**. That whiche

His vertues.

The thirde part of the thynges that

*Thei sente me is of a redde coulour, somewhat darke, and it
hath a good smell.*

¶ Of the Bezaar stones of the Peru.

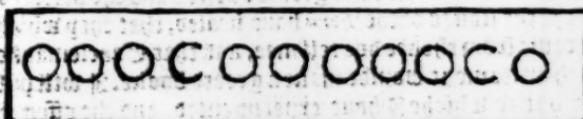


I though that in the seconde part I did
reate of the Bezaar stones, that hath
been founde in the Mountaines of the
Peru, for that thei haue been sent me by
the firste discouerer of theim, the beste
of as many whiche from those partes
hath come, I would saie in this thirde
parte some thyng of theim, whiche he sent me for knowe-
ledge, saying: for because I wrote of them thei had knowe-
ledge of them, and the booke whic he I wrote of them, was
the guide to finde and discouer them, as we haue saied, and
he doth shewe it by his letter, whiche we putte in the second
parte.

Those whiche he sent me, dooth moue to bec herie ex-
cellent in their couller, makyng, and greatnesse, the whiche
I haue broken some of theim, and finde them as excellente
as those of the East India: and so thei doe ende, in powder
or in one little graine as thei doe, and in coulour well nere
the same: trouthe it is, that those whiche haue this qualitie
and goodnesse, and haue all the qualitie that the Bezaar
stone oughte haue whiche are fine: I shoulde bee those that
are taken out of the beastes, that are syde in the Moun-
taines, for those whiche are taken out of theim that are
bredde in the plaine groondes, thei are not so good, nor
haue any heacimall vertues, because the beastes are not
maintained of these heacimall heabes, where these stones
are engendered, for as thei bee beastes and doeth thei we that
whiche thei doe feede of the iuice, that doeth procede of the
heabes, the stones are engendered: Whiche that gentle
man gaue well to understand, who was the first discouerer
of

of them, who did see how thei stode, and were bredd with-
in the beaste, and with his owne handes he made Anotho-
mie of hym, and he wrytch me that the Bezaar stones are
growyng in thole beastes, after the maner of a garde made
of fleshe, of the length of twoo paumes, little mox or lesse,
and of three fingers breadth, whiche is ioynd nere vnto
the Hawe of the inner parte, and in the garde the stones
are putte in, one after an other, like vnto button holes, in a
coate in this forme,

where these
stones doo
growe.



How thei
are put.

And thei doe open that garde of fleshe brynging closed, and
dooe take out the stones, that surely it is a marueilous
thyng, that Nature hath created there, for our healthe and
remedie of our euilles. And as I haue understande that
these whiche are brought from the East India, be founde
after the same maner, I doe speake the truth, for thei bryng
so many whiche are false, that emongest one hundred there
are not to be founde tenne that are true, and their writers
of the East India doe confess it, that there bee made ma-
ny whiche are false.

The people of the East India doe take them out also
of a certaine kynde of Goates, that bee for the moste parte
redder as ours bee, thei are the beste stones taken out of the
cattell, whiche goeth in the Mountaines of Persia; and like
wise thei doe take them out of other Goates, that goeth in
the plaine Countries of Malaca, and these are not had in
suche estimation, mox thei haue the goodnesse nor the ver-
ties that thei of Persia haue, because thole Goates of Ma-
laca doe serue for cattell to bee eaten, and thei be not main-
tained of healtfull Hearbes of the mountaines, as thei that

Thei of the
Oriental
Indias.

The thirde part of the thynges that

goeth in theim are; the like is in our Occidental Indias, for those whiche are brought vp in the Mountaines of the Peru, thei haue the stones fine and crue, and haue the marueilous Medicinall vertues, for thei that are in the plaine grounde, are like to these of Malaca, that goeth in flockes as catell dooth, whiche serueh for the Butcherie, and of these thei dooe take out many stones, but thei are without profice, because thei are not maintainedes of the healthfull hearbes of the Mountaines, as we haue saied.

Note.

If I would put here the greate effectes and the deseases whiche the stones of the Peru haue healed, that they which doe come from thence doe tell mee, and that Gentlemanne doeth witteme, it woulde make a greate booke. I will put that onelie whiche I haue experimented, and the effectes that I haue understande, that they doe, and these that haue past by my handes, whereby all credite may be geuen vnto it, and as a thinge certaine, seyng that there is experiance of it, with all assuraunce and trusse, it may be vse.

The medicinall vertues
whiche it
hath.

Our Occidental Bezaar stones haue greate vertues, principallye they doe remedie manye persones, whiche bee sick of the Harte. For the whiche I haue gauen greate quanticie of theim, that haue beene brought mee, and they haue made marueilous effectes, so muche that to manye persones whiche did suffer soundynges by takynge it awaie from them, they were deliuered from death, it must bee geuen when they doe sounde, and before it come, taking it in the morayng fastyng, with Rose Water, if the partie haue greate heate: if not, then with the water of the flowers of Orringes, the quantity of foure graines every tyme, made in Powder, in all kinde of Venome, it is the moste principall remedie that we knowe nowe; and that whiche hath doone best effect, in many that haue been poysoned, whiche haue taken it as well by Venome taken at the mouth: as by bittinges of venomous wormes, whiche are full of poyson. It doth truely a marueilous and a manifist wylde unto them that

For sow-
dinges.

In all kind of
venome.

that haue dronke water standyng in a stinkyng lake, beyng infected with beastes or varmentes whiche are full of poyson, and bryng swollen imediately after that thei had dronke it: by takyng of this stome twoo or three tymes, they were remedied, as I haue seen them after this did happe, whole and well.

*They that
hane dronke
ewill waters.*

In Pestilente feuers I haue geuen it manie tymes, and surely it doth extinguishe and kil the malice of them, which is the principall thing that the Phisitions shoulde procure in the like deseases, and although hee doeth take awaie the cause, and doeth withdrawe the putrefaction, and if hee doe not extinguish and take awaie the malice, the cure is never at an ende. For that is it whiche killeth, and doth the principall hurte, and where there is certain spottes in the body like to Flea bitinges, whiche doe appere in the like feuers the Bezaar stone of our Indias doeth make marueilous effectes. Of those whiche thei haue brought me, I haue spent the most parte, geuing thei in the like deseases, and surely it hath remedied many with marueilous successe, and in that whiche some of them haue been spente by me, hath been in soundinges, and surely I haue seen in these stones the effectes so great, that it semeth a thing of woder. And especially I haue seen these causes more remedied in women then in men, it is a marueilous thing to be taken, and it hath doen manifest effectes where there is a Melancholie humor, it doth repaire him muche, and it doth in him and in all thinges whiche doe resulte of him, a greate woanke, bee it universall or perticular, in the head or that as they call *Mirarchia*, and also in them that haue leprosie: of the *Arabiens* or *Elephantiacis*, of the *Greekes*, it doeth profite muche in Scabbes, in Itchings, in Scuruincesse, and in all partes of the bodie, that is infected, it maketh a verie good wooanke, and doeth remedie these euilles manifestly. For that this stome hath poyson to heale them, I haue geuen it in quarteine Agewes, and although it taketh not awaie the quarteine;

*In Pestilente
Feneris.*

Note.

*In Melan-
cholie hu-
mors.*

*In Leprosie
and all infe-
ction of the
bodie.*

The thirde part of the thynges that

*In quarterne
Agewes.* terne: it taketh awaite the accidentes of it, the faintnesse and
sadnesse, and the griefe of the harte, whiche in these Fe-
uers are common. Surely they doe feele with the vse of it

*In large
euellos.* notable profite, in all large and impotunate deseases, I do
geue it, and they finde profite in it, chiefly in those whiche
haue feare, of anie malice of desease, or windinelle, whatso-
ever it be. For I haue seen, that in this it hath a greate pro-
pertie, and of this it commeth, that it is good to caste in to
Pourges, some graines of it, that if the Pourage doe carry
venomous medicines, it maie rectifie them, and amend them,
and if not it geueth force, and strength to the hart, and they
wooke the better. In the orientall Indias they haue a cu-
stome to pourge themselves twoo times euerie yeare, and
especiallie the Noble People of estimation, and after they
haue pourged themselues, they take every morning fasting

*A custome
of the Orien-
tal Indians.* foure graines of the Bezaar Stone, wch Rose water, or wch
water made for the purpose, and they saie that this doeth
conserue the youth, and doth strengthen the Members, and
doth preserue them from deseases, and it is a good vse for it
can not let, but to doe them muche good. For Wormes they
geue this Stone with moste happye successe, and surely I
haue geuen it to many people, and especiallie to Children,
and Boyes, that are tormentid with this euill, and I haue
seen suche woorkes as are not to bee beleued, if they were
not seen. I doe geue it by it self, and I doe geue it mingled
with this poudcr, in this forme.

*Pouders to
be merueiled
at for the
wormes, &
all kinde of
them.* I dooe take Hearbe *Lumbriger* the waigthe of twelue
pence, the *Seede* of *Santonico* the waigthe of sixe pence, the
Horne of a *Harte* burned, and the *Seede* of *Verdolagas*, and
Carlina, of euerie one the waigthe of three pence, and the
Bezaar Stone of the *Peru*, the waigthe of three pence: of
these thinges let there be small Poudcr made, and let them
bee well mingled. These Pouders are marueilous and of
greate effecte, for to expell Wormes, and very muche expe-
rimented in manye people, and they haue doen in this case
greate

great effectes, and they myght bee giuen in the moruyng fastynge, as to the Phisition shall seeme good, accordyng to the age of him that hath take them, vsing of some Medicine of Milke, and Sugar twoo houres after thei be taken, and unto children beyng sick of it, we doe geue this stome mingled with Milke, and without it, if they doore lucke, and it doth a marauerilous woijke, and to them that be in peres, by it selfe, or mingled with other thynges appropiated for the desease. In conclusion wee doe geue this stome in all large deseases, and impotunate, where the ordinarie medicines haue not profited, in the whiche it doth manifest profite, and if it do no profite, it can doe no hurte.

Of the Figge Trees of the Peru.



Figge Trees beeyng caried from Spaine to the Peru, they haue increased so well in that Countrie, that there is greate quantite of them, and they doocary many and verie good Figges, of all sortes, and you shal understand that in that countrie there are certaine kinde of Tarmen, whiche are called Spiders, and where soever they be, they doe spiune, and make Nettes as they of Spaine doe, these kinde of Tarmen bee greate, and come to bee as greate as Dringes, and they are so full of poysون that with one stinging they kill, vntesse there be put greate remedie. And if he be long time without remedie, and that the Poysون goe vp to the Harte, there is nothng that can be doen that will benifise, but he must die without remedie, and for this there is founde a remedie in the Figge Trees, whiche is a marauerilous thing, that as soone as the Indians or the Spaniardes doe feele themselues bitten of this euill Spider, they goe to the Figge trees, and they put to it the Milke whiche doth comeforth of the Leaues of them, two or three tymes in the place, that is bitten, and this doeth so greate effecte,

C. J. that

Spiders.

The thirde parte of the thynges that

that it doeth venesir whiche is so poysoned, with the venom that the Clarmewid calle into the soze, and the accidentes be remitted that they doe suffer, of greace grieves and soundinges, remaining only so to heale the place hitten, and as it is little it healeth soothly with, although they procure to keepe him open of a long tyme. And Gods will is, that at all times this remedie lacke not, for the Figg-Trees never loose their leaues, in all the yere they are alwaies greene.

Of the Coca.



The description of the
Coca.

Was dessirous to see that hearbe so celebratid of the Indians, so many yeres past, whiche they doe call the *Coca*, whiche they doe sow and cill with mucche care, and diligencie, for because they doe vse it for their pleasures, which we will speake of. The *Coca* is an hearbe of the height of a yerd, little moare or less, he carrieth his Leaues like to *Arraiban*, somewhat greater, and in that Leafe there is marked an ocher Leafe of the like forme, with a line very thicke, they are softe, and of colour a light greene, they carrie the seede in clusters, and it commeth to be so redde when it is ripe, as the seede of *Arraiban*, when it is ripe. And it is of the same greatness, when the hearbe is seasoned, that it is to be gathered, it is knownen in the seeing, that it is ripe and of some rednes like to a blacke kythe colour, and the hearbe beynge gathered, they put them into Canes and other thinges, that they may drye, that it may be keapte and caried to ocher partes. For that they carrie them from some high Mountaines, in aches, as *Marcahandile* to be soulede, and they barter and change them for *Spanielles*, and *Cattell*, and *Salte*, and other.

other thinges which doe runne like to moner amongst vs, they doe put the seede into Almase, and from that they do take them by and set them in another place, into Earth that is well laboured of tilled, and made as it is conuenient for to put them by their lynes, and order as we do put here a Garden of Beanes, or of Beans, to go to the ground.

The use of it amongst these Indians is nothing generall, for many thinges, for when they doe traauail by the wacie, for neede and for their contente when they are in their houses, they use it in this forme. They take Cohles or Disters, in their shelles, and they doe burne them and grinde them; and after they are burned they remaine like Lyne, verie small grounde, and they take of the Lynes of the Cohles, and they chawe them in their Mouthes, and as they goe chawynge, they goe mingling with it of that powder made of the shelles in such forme, that they make it like to a Paste, taking less of the Powder then of the Hearbe, and of this Paste they make certaine small Batoles rounde, and then put them to drye; and when they will use them, they take a little Ball in their mouthe, and they chawe hym; pulling hym from one parte to an other, procuring to consecute hym all that they can, and that being done, they use recourse to take an other; and so they goe, using of it all the time that they haue neede, which is when they traauail by the wacie, and especially if it be by water where is no meane of lacke of water. For the use of these little Batoles doose take the hunger and thurste from them, and they say that they dooe receive substaunce, as though that they did eat. At other times they use of them for their pleasure, although that they labour not by the wacie, and they do use the same Cacaoe, chawynge it and byring it in their mouthes, from one side to another, until there be no vercke remayninge of it, and then they take an other.

The use of it.

*John S.
Note.*

The second parte of the thynges that

*Tabaco, and ther doe chwe them all togoþer, and ther got
as ther were out of ther wittes, like as if ther were monks
whiche is a thyng that dooþeth gree them greate contente-
ment to bee in that syde. Durely it is a thyng of greate
consideration, to see how the Indiane are so desirous to
bee depriued of their wittes, and to bee without understand-
yng, syng that the doteys of the Cese with the Tabaco,
and the use of the Tabaco, for that ther woulde bee without
understanding, and to haue their wittes taken from them,
as we saide in the seconde parte, when we did treat of the
Tabaco.*

Of the divers coulours of the grounde.



*T*is a maruellous thing, and wel to be
loked vpon, the divers coulours of the
groundes which are in the shelues, in the
countries of the Peru: for that lokynge
a faire of you shall see many partes of
groundes of divers coulours, that ser-
meth to bee clothes, of coulours putte
to drie in the Sunne: for that you shall see one parte of the
grounde Creame, and another Blowe, and for the which an
other Yeallow, and Whiter, and Blache, and Redde, and
so of other coulours; all the whiche are Minetts of divers
Couthes, of the Blache I can say that ther senf mee a little
that therre with I might make Inke, the whiche being cast
in to Water or Wine is myne therre of verie good Inke,
wherewith one may write verie well, and it is sumwhat
Blowe, whiche doth make it of a herre shewe.

*The redde grounde hath beeene a thing of greate riches
whiche hath beeene taken out of it, for it is a Minery moste
excellent, of the whiche is made quicke Siluer, and therre
is taken out so muche quantite of it, that there is caried to
the realme of Spaine, Shippes laden of it, whiche is arrched*

so greate, that it is not knownen vnto the Indians, it doeth serue them for no more then, to mingle it with certayne Gunnes, for to painte hemselues withall, the whiche they doe use when they go to their warres, for to shew hemselues gallant, and fearefull. Every daie they doe discouer in those Countries greate Mineries of Mettalea, and of those thinges, for that they haue founde one a Mountaine of Oker, and a Mine of Allom and an other of Bismistone and many other thynges whiche thei goe discoueryng of.

Of the Casany.



Hauen caused that they shoulde bryng mee from Santo Domingo a Leafe of that Plant whiche thei doo make the Casani, and they broughte it mee. The Casani is the bread, the whiche the Indians haue in multitudenes of yeres that thei with thei haue maintained themselfes, and doe maintaine, and likewise many Spaniardes, it is made of an Herbe that the Indians doo call Taca; whiche is of five or sixe Paumes of height, it carleth certayne Laves or pen, spreide aboue like to the fingers of the hande, and every one doeth carpe seven or eight pointes, shapre alwaies gyane, they are set in a grounde not tilled, of pieces cut of the same plant, the fruite is after the maner of grosse Turnepes, they are of colour Tawnye without, onelle in the bodie, for within they are white, and they pare them for so use of them, and of this fruite they make Bread in this forme.

Thei doo make it cleane from the Rinde, and thei doe Grate it in certayne Graters, whiche are made of Needles, and beyng so grated thei putte it into a liue of Palme, and vpon it thei put thynges of waight, whiche are greate stones, that dooeth make the iuice runne out of it, and beynge well pressed, it dooeth remaine as Almonds beaten: thei

Casani is
bread in the
Indies.

The descrip-
tion of the
herbe and
the fruite.

How they do
make bread
of the fruite.

The thirde part of the thynges that

þoe cast this into a plaine selieng panne of yearch, that ther
haue put to the fire, and thererþe theri kneve it, and þoe make it
like to a little cake of Egges, countynge it from one side to
another þant afer it is well kneved, it remaineth made a
cake, of the chyndelle of a peice of linnen of fower shillyn-
ges, litle more whiche theri putte in the Sunne, that is
maide drye, and of this cakeþ theri use for breaðe, whiche is of
mache substance: and these cakes be long tyne without
corþeyng, and theri dryng them in the Spypes whiche
commeth from those partes, and theri come into Spaine
without beyng corrupted, and it serueth for Bisket to all
the people: It eateth as a thyng sharpe, and so it serueth,
takeþ it to shiken in water, or in broche, or in Pottage, for
after this maner theri doe serue them selues beccer with it,
then for to eate it drye, it is needefull to have a vellell with
water, for to soaken it.

Note the
maruelles of
the Joyce.

It is a maruelous thyng of the Juice whiche commeth
out of this fruite, whiche is spoken of, that if any manne or
beaste doe drinke it, or any parte of it, incontinent he dieth,
as with the moste strong venome that is in the woorlde: but
if this Juice dooe seeth, and doe consume the one halfe, and
so dooe putte it to coole, it serueth for very good Cysperer,
and it is used as if it were made of wine, and if you leue it
tuncill it bee throughtly pourged and thicke, it serueth for
Honye, and it is made sweete: you maie see how muche the
sechynge doeth in these thynges, seeyng that of moþall ve-
nyme, it makeþ meate and healthfull drinke. And I will
saie an oþer thyng whiche dooeth put admiration: that all
this kunde of coyne, whiche doeth growe in the firme lande
whiche is like to that of *Sancto Domingo*, the whiche theri
doe call *Cacauis* is healeþfull, and the fruite thererþe is eaten
and the water that commeth of it is dronke, without ha-
uyng any venemous vertue. and that of *Sancto Domingo*,
how so ever it bee eaten, and his Juice vunlesse it bee sodden
it killeþ. And that the disposition of the place is so greate
a cause

a cause, that whiche is healthfull and allowable sustenaunce in the Firme lande, the sage is mortall venome in all the Ilandes: as *Columela* doeth saie of the Peache, that it was venime moste mischeuous, whiche in Persia did kill, and brought it into Iealie it loste that malice and office that it had to kill, and doeth gene vnto vs healthe and sweete Juice.

Columela.

How so ever it bee, bauyng in the Indias so muche Maies, and so common in all partes of it, I would not eare *Casani*, sayng that the Maies is of so muche substance as our Wheate, and in no parte it hath neither venome, nor poysone, rather it is healthfull, and doeth make a good stomachacher: there is breade made of it, as of the *Casani*, for thei grinde it, and with wate thei knede it, and in a Frying panne of peart thei bake certain cakes, whiche thei make of it, and it muste bee eaten freshe, as soone as it is made: for deyng drye, it is sharse and troublsome to swallowe vounre, and doeth offend the teeth.

Mayis.

Bread of Mayis.

The *Batatas*, whiche is a common fruite in thole countrries, I dooe take them for a victaile of muche substance, and that thei are in the middest betwene fleshe and fruite, truthe it is that thei bee windie, but that is taken from the rostynge of them, cheefly if thei bee put into waine beryng fine: there is made of them conserua very excellente, as of *Harmolade*, and small moysselles, and thei make potages and broches, and cakes of them verie excellente: thei are subiecte to bee made vpon them any maner of conserua, and any maner of meate: there be so many in Spaine, that thei bryng from *Velez*, *Malaga* every yeare to *Senill*, tene or twelue Cartulles laden with them: Thei bee sownen of the same plances that are sette, the smalles of them, or peeces of the greatest in the peart that is well tilled, and thei growe very well, and in eight monethes the rootes are verie grosse, that you maie eare of them: Thei bee temperate, and rostyd, or otherwise prest, thei doeth soothen the heallie,

Batatas.

and

The second parte of the thynges that

*and beeyng rauere, thei are not good to bee eaten, because
thei are windie, and harde of digestion.*

Of the Canes w^r whiche are good for the shortnesse of breathe.



Hei doe bryng from the newe Spayne
greate Canes, of a Cane that is cou-
red within and without with a certain
Gumme, and to me it semeth that it is
mingled with the Juice of Tabaco, and
it is heaute, it semeth that the Cane is
annoyned, and as a thyng that clin-
geth fasse, it is clunge well to the saide Cane, and it hath a
blacke conllour, and beynge harde it clingeþ not, thei dooe
kindell the Cane by that parte whiche the Gumme is put,
and the other parte of it thei putte in the mouthe, and that
doe receiue that smoke, and with this thei doe cast out from
theim all Flegme and rotteneſſe, that is in the breaste, and
this thei doe when thei doe finde theim selues greued with
the shortnesse of winde, that thei bee all ready to choke, I
haue seen it doen by a gentleman, whiche is muche pained
with it many tymes, and doeth feele with it greate profitte:
and did it first with the Tabaco, takynge the smoke of it, and
it did to hym the like benefitte, and for this cause I saie, that
it seemeth, that it carrieth with it the Juice of the Tabaco,
mingled with the one and with the other, it is doen withall
assuraunce, for that wee doe see it with manifest assuraunce
in many.

*For faintnes
or shortnes
of breath.*

*S*ome beeyng sick of the shortnesse of breaste, that
commeth from the Indias, with it I haue seen theim ex-
pell, and caste out this rotteneſſe, thei take a little Ta-
baco greene, and thei chewe the Juice of it, and although it
bee lochsome, it doeth theim muche good to expell the rot-
teneſſe and Fleumes, whiche are retained within the bres-
thes,

nes, and thei bee lightned with it notable: it is a marueilous thyng, the greate vertues, and sonderie and diuers es-
fetes that thei goe discouerung of the Tabaco, for besides
that whiche I haue written of it in the second parte, of his
marueilous vertues, I would make an other of that as I
haue understande, and seen since that tyme.

Of the Carlo Sancto.



So the seconde parte we did create of
the vertues of a Roote, that when thei
had broughht from the newe Spaine,
that thei call *Carlo Sancto*, now in these
Shippes thei bryng it with greate ve-
neration and estimation, and the roote
is called *Indica*, and thei bryng written
so many vertues of it more then they are wone to say of the
Rosemarie, of those that haue been experimenced, and haue
bene seen since that I wrote of it, I will speake of this roote
beyng made pouder, geuen to womeu that newly broughe
foore the Chilidren, that so euill keeping they take greate
colde and bee benumde, it doeth profite muche to mouoke
them to sware, and they doe remaine cleare, it doeth profite
muche geuen with wine or water, of the flowers of Orin-
ges unto them, that haue a harde Labowle, there was a
Frier whiche had paines of the Stomacke, and hee had
no ease of his Heate, but had an euill breathing, and much
windynesse, and all did procede of calde that he had, and lit-
tle naturall heate. He did sech of these Woordes in water at
his discretion as the water of the Sarcaparilla is sodden, and
so hee dranke it continually, at dinner and supper for long
time, and it dyd so well with him, that hee amended his Stom-
macke, and did increase vnto him the heate of it, whereby
he did digest, & consume his meate very well, and Cooke fro
 hym his euill breake, and consumed the windes, and in ca-

*The vertues
that it hath.*

Historie.

D. s. kyng

The thirde part of the thynges that

*For them
that be bro-
ken.*

kyng of this water there followed a remedie not thought of, whiche was that hee was broken many peres, and did carie continually with hym a Biche made for the purpose. And he tooke it not from hym in a long tyme, and hauyng bled the water two Monthes, he founde himself whole and well, and so he is now well without feyng any chyng of it.

*For the
Teeth,
Nore.*

In the seethyng of this roote, washing your mouth therewer, it doeth strengthen the Goumes, it doeth keepe the Teeth from Worme eatyng, and if you haue anie Teeth worme eaten, it suffereth them not to proceede forwarde. I haue experimeted many peres, to cause the Mouthe to be washed continually with the equall partes of Vinegar of Swilles, and Water of the small heedes of Roses, that surely if it be vsed to washe the Teeth and Goumes with it continually, it preserueth them from eatyng of Wormes, and if there bee anie it passeth not forwarde, the whiche I haue experimeted and vsed in many for many peres.

¶ Of the Stone for the Mother.

*How it is
a stone.*



¶ H^ere doe bring from the newe Spaine a stone
that they doe say it doth profit muche for the
ewill of the Mother, it is a blacke Stone and
verie smoothe and waighty, for the most parte
they are long and rounde, it is a greate thing
that they doe say that this stone doeth, for that a Ladie of
greate countenaunce and credite, did certifie mee that she
put hym to her Dauell, and he clung faste to it, and that she
had founde with him manifel profit, and so doe others say
that haue vsed hym in the like sorte. When they doe feale the
paines they bee well neere choked with it, and in putting
the stone, it taketh it awaie immediatly, and if they haue it
continually put, it never commeth unto them, the credite
that I geue to the thynges is the experiance that is known
men of it.

¶ Of

The bryng of the Canafistola in conserua.

Iwas desirous to see the Leaffe of the Tree, that the *Canafistola* doth beare, and the flower whiche it doeth caste out, saying that here bee byne the fruit so knownen, and so they brought me the Leaffe, and the flower drye, the leaffe is like to the leaffe of a Peare Tree, the flower is verie little, and whit, of fve leaues, and although it be dry it hath some good smell. Of these flowers dooth come soorth the those greate Canes of the *Canafistola*, so knownen of all people in the wold. And there is carried from this our Cittie many shippes laden of it, before it came from the Indias, the *Canafistola* was broughte from Egypce to Alexandria, and from thence to Tunis; and from thence it was reparted for all places, and nowe thei bring it from Sancto Domingo, and from Haince. *Whou do Puerco Rico*, to this Cittie; and from thence it is reparted through all the wold. Of that of our Indias is taken to bee better, and of better woode then that of *Leuante*, of that little flower so dycell, there is produced those Canes of *Canafistola*, that some of them haue four paumes of length, from the tyme that thei spring out and haue the greatesse that they shoule haue, they are allwaies greene, and criste of muche sharpnesse, as the Berries called *Algareous* bee when they are greene, after they are growne as greate as they will be, they ware ripe, and then they are redde, and they come to bee blacke, and the more blacke they bee, the fuller of Honey they are, and more ripe. And the Canes that are not very blacke but sumwhat like to roses are not ripe, In such sorte that the moste blacke and the smoothest and the waigtest are the beste, of the flower, as we haue saien there is made Conserua in two sortes, the one beaten with Sugare like Sugare of Roses, and the other made of the whole flower sodden in Sugare, the one and the other is verie good Conserua, ta-

*The Leaf
of the Flo-
wer of the
Canafistola.*

*Conserua of
the flower.*

The thirde part of the thynges that

Of the Canes in Conserva.

ken from two to threounces of it, it poureth well and easilie, and euen as it is good to take, it is good to woorke, for that I haue pourged many people with it, and it doeth a verie good woorke, and poureth without paines. One thing they doe euill in shose pottes, and is that they never byng them herber made with good Sugar, if they did come so they wold be the better, and of better take. They be pourges for delicate people, they doe evacute the same humor that the *Canafistola* doth. Of the Canes of the small *Canafistola* there is made an other Conserva verie good, whiche is an excellent pourge, and delicate: for that they take the small canes, whiche are growynge of a small tyme, and they seeth them in Sugar, and with the seething and Sugar, there is taken from them the sharpenesse and the drenesse whiche they haue, and they are made tender and soft, & of a verie good savor, these being taken maketh a verie good woorke, and doth pourge without griefe or molestacion, and without all accidencies and safenesse that pourges are vised to haue, for that they are full of good taste, at the taking of them, and light of working, there is generall of them from this ounces to thre, I haue genea them many times with verie good successe, and I haue taken them beeing sicke, and they did woorke verie well with mee. Of shalfe Conservas they did bring herber vertue perte from *Santo Domingo*, and *Puerto Rico* many Barvelles thereof, the *Canafistola* that is perfect and ripe, is the mooste excellent medicine for to pourge with all, of as many as haue beene knownen to this date, and that doeth his woorke best in that as it sercketh for, and with most aleraunes, as it is notorious not onely to the *Physitions*, but to all the worlde, and doth his woorke without the hurtes and accidencies which the other purgative Medicines are vised to doe, and so it is a generall Medicine, and amongst them that are blessed. The mooste blessed of all, whose vertues and properties wee haue declarete of particularly, in the first parte, and that as we haue

haue saied in this hath been to gene relation of the leaues, and floweres of it, whiche they haue now brought me.

One chynge I woulde thei shoulde bee aduertised, whiche doeth commaunde to geue *Cannabis* to soe to lighten and soften the heallie, and soe that the common matters maie bee putte doun, so that thei shoulde take it a small tyme before meate bee eaten, at the mooste halfe an hower before, so that the meate beyng mingled ioyntly with it, it doth woorkhe with it, and in this order it doth a verie good woorkhe, and purgech very wel, and without paines whiche is not doen with that whiche is taken any longe tyme before meate, as two or thre houers before, as now many doth use, so that the meate beyng dilaced, it maketh an ende of his woorkhe, and as it is a chynge without strenghe and weake, it goeth all in vapours, the whiche it sheadeth it self abhade by all the bodie, and if it carrie longe, it is conuerged into meate, and substaunce, whiche I haue seen by experiance in many yeres, whiche I haue cures, that alwaies as I gaue it halfe an hower before Meate at the mooste, it maketh a good woorkhe, and if it bee giuen many houers before meate, it purgech, and evaucuatech little. *Ecce medicina*, whiche doeth purge with the meate, *Hippocratis* doeth cleare of it in many parties, and *Galen* in his *Compendaries*: truthe it is, when we will that the *Cannabis* shoulde not evaucuate, but that the vapours shoulde bee spredded abroad by the raines, and all the bodie, we doe geue it many houers before meate, and not woorkyng, it doeth the effect as wee haue saied.

¶ Of the Balsamo of Tolm.



They doone newlie bryng nowe from the Firme lande, from a Province whiche is betwene *Cartagena*, and *Numbre de Dios*, that the Indians doeth call *Tolm* a Balsamo, or licour, that is the

Du. us.

helle

The thirde part of the thynges that

How the
Trees are
where it is
gathered.

How it is
gathered.

Blacke waxe

beste thyng, and of greatest vertues, of as many as haue
come from that partes. Thei gather it from cercaine trees,
whiche are after the maner of little Pinos, whiche doth cast
out many bowes to all partes, he carrieth the leaffe like to
Algarrona, all the pere it is greene, they are the best whiche
doeth growe in a solem grounde well tilled.

This Balsamo the Indians doeth gather by wase of inci-
sion, giuyng certayne cuttes in the Rinde of this Tree,
for it is thinne and softe, and thei doe puce underneath
it, nere unto the Tree, thynges like to dishes made of ware,
that is in that counerie blacke; whiche thei doe take out of
Hives, that certayne blacke Bees doe make in the chap-
pynges of the grounde, the whiche I haue seen broughte
muche of this Ware to Spaine, and was spente in To-
ches, and it was forbiidden that none of it shold bee spent,
for the smoke whiche did caste from it, had so euill a smell,
that it could not bee suffered. Thei did use this Ware in
thynges of Herodie, for therof was made Cereclo-
thes, whiche made verie good effectes, in mitigatyng græce
of any colde caufe, it doeth dissolue any maner of swellyn-
ges, and dooeth make many other good effectes: of this
Ware the Indians doose make it like to a spone, and doore
puce it close to the Tree, that it mate receue the licoure
that doeth come out of it, by the place where the cuttynges
are that thei make, and from thence thei caste it into those
vesselles, and it is needfull that it bee dooen in tyme of
greate heate, that the cuttynges maie caste out the licoure,
and in this tyme likewise, there dooeth faken out of the
ioyntes of the saied tree some licoure, and it is losse because
it is so little, and falleth into the groud: in the night there
commeth forthe none.

This lie out, of Balsamo is verie muche esteemedemon-
gest the Indians, and of greate value, and with the greate
woorkes whiche therewith is dooen, and of them the Spa-
niardes hath learned, and by seyng the greate woorkes
whiche

whiche it doeth, thei haue brought it herber, as a thyng of greate estimation, and as suche a thyng thei buye it ther for a greate price: and thei haue reason to dooe it for one of the bessle thynges that haue come from those partes, whiche hath been brought for Medicine is this Balsamo, whiche doeth sem to be better then that of the newe Spaine, and in it self semeth to haue moe vertues.

It is of an Albo[n]e coullour, verie nere like to a thyng that is gilte, it is not verie thinne, nor verie thicke, it cly-
geth faste where so euer it bee put, and it hath his taste and
saour sweete, and although it bee taken, it maketh not a-
ny horriblenesse, as the other Balsamo dooeth: it hath a
molte excellene smell, like to Limons, so moche that where
so euer it bee, his good smell dooeth giue greate contente-
mente, and it can not bee hidden, for a litle of it smelleth
muche: and if you rubbe your hande therewith, there doeth
remaine a marueilous smell. His woorkes are excellente
and verie greate, for that it is licour whiche is taken out
by incision, as thei cooke out in olde tyme the Balsamo in
Egipte; and for all those deseases whiche that was good
for, this of ours is as good.

*His couller
and maner.*

*The workes
and effectes
of this Bal-
samo.*

*How they do.
care with it.*

It healeth all sleathe woundes, confortyng the par-
tes, and soynynge theim without making anymarter, and
without leauyng any signe of cheare, where muste bee taken
awate the superfluitie that is in the wounde, of what sorte
so euer it bee, and washe it with wine, and joyne well the
lippes and partes therof, and puttē the Balsamo to it,
when the colonesse is out of it, and forchwith a double lin-
nen clothe vpon it, weare in the same Balsamo, and so
bounde that the lippes goe not a sunder, and keepyng diet,
and vsyng lettryng of blood if it bee needfull: and ne g v-
bindyng it vncill the fowerth daie, and then thei shall finde
the wounde comforted, excepte that there be any accident,
whiche dooeth cause that it shold bee vndooen before: and
when the cause is suche, that it dooeth require to bee cured
every

The thirde part of the thynges that

every daie, by receyng the wette Linnen clothe into the Balsamo it will bee healed, for the vertue of this Balsamo is to cause that there bee no matter engendered in the woudes, in especially this Balsamo doeth profite in woun- des, where there hath been cuttynges of bones, takyng them out that hath been diuided one from an other, and not touchyng in the reste, for that the vertue of the Balsamo will caste them out, and hauyng so dooen, will heale the wounde. One of the thynges wherein this Balsamo doeth greatest effectes, is in woundes and ioyntes, and in cuttynges of Senewes, and in all prickes: for in all these kinde of woudes it maketh a marueilous woork, curyng and preseruynge them from extreame colde, and from runnyng together of senewes, that thei remaine not lame. The woun- des whiche doeth penetrate, are healed with this Balsa- mo, beeynge mingled with white Wine, and spoutyng in to them with it, and after three houers take it out againe: this must bee doen in woudes or prickes, once every daie and that it goe with a moderate heate. Likewise this Balsa- mo doeth serue to bee put, where hath beene giuen dyie blowes, or brysinges, and for all woorkes of Surgerie, where is no notable inflamation, the whiche beeynge taken awaie with the Medicines, whiche is conuenient for it, the Balsamo maie then bee vsed.

*In Diseases
that be not
of Surgerie.*

In euilles whiche bee not of Surgerie this Balsamo doth profite muche in hym that hath the shernes of breach by taking a fewe droppes in white wine it profiteth much, it taketh awaie the grief of the head being of a colde cause, and a little plastrer beeynge put vpon the grisse, and wette therewith to the Temples of the head, doth take awaie all runninges by those partes, and in especially the euilles of the eyes, and Reumes that runne to theim, put to the sope- parte of the head, and it must be good and hotte, it taketh awaie the paines of it, and doth comforste it, and doth reme- die the Pallie. Some that haue beene in a Consumption haue

haue vsed it, takynge some droppes in the morning, licking it in the Palme of the hande, and they haue felte notable profit. And it doth make cleane the breast very well, it is good to take some droppes with *Aqua vite*, hot, before any maner of colde of a Quarteine Ague, or of a lerge impotunat tertian Ague, annoynctyng it with y^e same Balsamo, mengled with Oyle of *Ruda*, to al the Temples of the hed, good and hotte before the cold doth come: If with the Balsamo they doe annoynce from the mouthe of the stomacke to the Mauill, it doth confort the stomache, it giueth a lustre to meate, it helpeth Digestiō, it dissoluyeth vndyndes, it taketh awaie the paines of the stomacke, and it maketh farre better these effectes, if the halfe of the Balsamo be mingled and the other halfe of Oyle of *Spike Nardi* compounded or simple, and so it is better applied: there is greate expe-rience of it in the Indias, for Swellynges that haue the maner of Dropesies, and with mingelyng it with Dynamente, dissoluyatue or equal partes, and annoynctyng the Beally therewith chiesly, the parte nere the Lunges, they haue seen therewith greate effectes, it doth dissolve any maner of swelling or hardnes that is in any parte of the body, and beyng put vpon any paine that is of a colde cause, al-though it bee of a long cyme, it taketh it awaie with brin-ging it so put vntill it fall of it selfe, the same it doth where-soever is any winde. And if it be in the belly or in any parte of the bodie, putting it hot in a Linen Clothe in *Aqua vite* of the besse, well heate, put to the paine, where the griefe of the Stone is, and mengled with Oyle made for the purpo-se, it maketh a greate woozke, it taketh awaie the paines of the Senowes, beyng shyonke together, and in a vrie hotte weathur, rubbyng them with it, it desolueth theim. The euill called the *Lamparones* that are open or shucce, it healeth them. Many other effectes this marueilous licour doth, whiche I haue nor knowen, these whiche I haue kno-wen I doe manifest to all the worlde, that they may professe

The second parte of the tbynges that

of so marueilous a Medicine, whiche hath so many vertues
as you haue haue haue, and euerie daie the tyme will discouer
other greater.

*The ende of the thirde and last
Translation.*



THE TABLE OF THE thinges that these three Booke doe containe.

The firste Booke.	
Of the Anime & Capal.	fol. 1
Of the Tacamahaca	fol.
Of the Caranna.	fol. 4
Of the Dyle of the Figge Tree.	fol. 5.
Of the Gumme.	fol. 6
Of the Liquid Ambar and his Dyle.	fol. 6
Of the Balsamo.	fol. 7.
Of Guaiacā & holie wood.	12
Of the China.	fol. 13
Of the Sarcaparilla	fol. 15
Of the Bloud stone, and the stone, for the desease of the stone.	fol. 18
Of the wodde for the vine,	fol.
Of the Peper of the Indias	19
Of the Canafistola.	fol. 21
Of the Purgatiue Nuttes.	fol.
Of the purgatiue Pindous.	fol. 22
Of the purgatiue Beanes.	fol.
Of the Milke of Pinipint.	23
chi.	fol. 23
Of the Mechoacan.	fol. 23
Of the Quicke Sulphure.	fol.
Of Aromaticke wood.	31
In the seconde Booke.	
Of the Tabaco.	fol. 34
Of the Sassafras.	
Of the Carlo San- cto.	fol. 57
Of saint Elenes Bedes.	59
Of the Guacatane.	fol. 60
Of the small Barlie.	fol. 62
The Epistle from the Peru.	fol.
Of the bloud of Diago.	64
Of the Armadillo.	fol. 73
Of the flower of Mechoa- can.	fol. 75
Of the Fruite of Balsamo,	fol.
Of the long Peper	fol. 77
Of the Sarcaparilla of Gu- iaquill.	fol. 79
Of Ambar grise.	fol. 82
In the thirde Booke.	
Of the Sinamon of our Indias.	fol. 88.
Of the Ginger.	89.
Et.ij.	Of

The Table.

Of the Ruiubarbe of the Indias.	fol. 89	Of a Tree which doth shewe whether one shall live or die.	96
Of the Pinnas.	fol. 90		97
Of the Guaiauas.	fol. 90	Of the Granadilla.	97
Of the Cachos	fol. 91	Of the herbe of the Sunne,	97
Of the flowers of bloud.	92	fol.	
Of the Rinde of a Tree for Reames.	fol. 92	Of a Gumme that is taken out vnder the Grounde.	98
Of the pacal.	ibid.	fol.	
Of the Paico.	ibid.	Of the Bezaar Stones of the Peru.	98
Of an hearbe for the tail of the Raines.	ibid.	Of the Figge Trees of the Peru	100
Of the fruite whiche groweth vnder the ground.	93	Of the Edea.	100
Of a fruite called Leucoma.	fol. 93	Of the Coullours of diuers groundes.	102
Of the washing Beades stones.	fol. 94	Of the Casau.	103
Of the Crabbes of that countrie.	fol. 94	Of the Canes for shorenelle of breath.	104
Of the Cardones	fol. 94	Of the Carls Sancto.	105
Of an Hearbe soylethem that are broken.	fol. 95	Of the Stone for the Mother.	105
Of the Gervaine.	fol. ibid.	Of Canastola in Conserua.	160
Of the Maltuerlo	fol. 96	fol.	
Of the wilde Lettise.	fol. 96	Of the Balsamo of Tolu.	170
Of the licour called Ambia.		fol.	

The ende of the Table.

